This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

N 2.

James Middlemore.

D[redacted]/3

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

Wherein are exhibited

VIEWS of ſeveral ſtriking SCENES,

WITH

Curious and intereſting ANECDOTES, of the moſt Noted Perſons in every Rank of Life, whoſe Hands it paſſed through,

IN

AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY, *and* PORTUGAL.

——Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To ſhew Vice its own Image, Virtue its own Likeneſs,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His Form and Preſſure. SHAKESPEARE.

Qui capit, ille facit.

By an ADEPT.

VOL. III.

LONDON:
Printed for T. BECKET and P. A. DE HONDT, at Tully's Head, near Surry-Street, in the Strand.
MDCCLXV.

ADVERTISEMENT.

THE circumſtances in which *the Adventures of a Guinea* fell into the hands of the Editor, as explained in the General Preface, account for this, and the former Additions to that Work.

The uncommon favour, with which the firſt Edition, imperfect as it was, was received, encouraged him to ſpare no pains for the recovery of the reſt of the Manuſcript: Though his ſucceſs however in this attempt exceeded his expectations, fear of the prejudice, in general too juſtly, entertained againſt *Continuations*, prevented his publiſhing, in the Second Edition, any more of what he had recovered, than could be added without enhancing the price. But as the ſale of ſo many numerous impreſſions, ſince that Addition, has entirely removed every ſhadow of ſuch fear, he thinks it would be injuſtice to the Publick to withhold the reſt from them any longer.

As to the objection made to *Continuations*, that they are written after the first design is compleated, and when the imagination is exhausted, it can by no means affect the following sheets, which are really *a Restitution of the Original*, not an Addition of any thing new; as will plainly appear to the judicious Reader, who will find the same scope of imagination, the same spirited freedom, and depth of remark in every period of these Volumes, which so eminently distinguished the former; and trace the genuine connection through the whole.

For one great disadvantage, which these Volumes lie under, Candour will make the just allowance, when the occasion of it is considered.

This is the Printing of these Parts, thus detached, and by themselves with only references to the places, where they follow in the Context of the former Volumes; by which means they lose the advantage of the general Fable, or as I may say, *Machine*, which so happily introduces and supports the whole, and of which

which no more could be recovered; all but what was at firſt publiſhed, being cancelled by the Orthodoxy of the pretended Clergyman, into whoſe hands the Manuſcript unfortunately fell, who ſpared no more than was indiſpenſibly neceſſary to open the deſign. *

Had the Editor attended ſolely to his own intereſt, it would have ſuggeſted to him to have publiſhed this, as he did the former Addition, inſerted regularly according to the Connection; as the eſtabliſhed reputation of the Work would enſure the ſale of the whole, even to thoſe, who had before purchaſed the former Volumes. But this was an artifice he was incapable of uſing; and he choſe to publiſh theſe Volumes, in this manner, rather than incur the leaſt ſuſpicion of ſo mercenary a deſign. He hopes therefore, that a diſadvantage occaſioned by ſuch a delicate diſintereſtedneſs will not be looked upon as a defect; and that the whole will be viewed together, before any part is accuſed of abruptneſs, or want of uniformity to the general deſign.

* *See the General Preface.*

ADVERTISEMENT.

The abſurdity, and injuſtice of levelling the general reproof of vice, againſt particular Perſons, and tracing to real characters a work of mere imagination, are too glaring to require proof. Mr. *Addiſon*, in the inſtance he has given in one of his *Spectators*, of *the whole Duty of Man*, has ſhewn that the beſt book that ever was written (humanely ſpeaking) is liable to be conſtrued into a ſcandalous libel, by ſuch a *Perverſion*.

The Editor of this Work has the ſatisfaction to ſee that whatever injurious attempts of that kind were at firſt made againſt it, they have not been able to prejudice it in the opinion of the Publick, as appears from the great and continued demand for it, for ſo many years. Defamation may pleaſe the malignancy of Man for a day; but it muſt be merit that can ſtand the teſt of time. Such inſinuations are long ſince forgot, becauſe unſupported by truth; as will all of the ſame nature, which may be made againſt the Volumes, now offered to the Publick, while the merit of them ſhall remain for the entertainment and inſtruction of ages.

THE

THE CONTENTS OF THE THIRD VOLUME.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

INtroduction. CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice. His maſter finds an ingenious excuſe for returning home; but is unexpectedly ſtoped ſhort by the way. In the common courſe of buſineſs,* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice: Character of his new maſter.* Page 1

CHAP. II.

Motives of the enterprize in which CHRYSAL*'s maſter was engaged. In a private conference between him and his agent, ſome curious ſecrets, in a buſineſs not generally underſtood,*

are laid open, and a seeming contradiction naturally reconciled. Page 7

CHAP. III.

The behaviour of CHRYSAL*'s master on hearing an interesting piece of news, with his concise method of conducting an enterprize.* CHRYSAL *changes his service for that of a person of a very different character. An eloquent speech produces the usual effects of eloquence.* 12

CHAP. IV.

The general professes an uncommon motive for military ardour. An officer desires to speak with him, the mention of whose name opens some secrets in the service. Account of the officer. An extraordinary instance of ignorance of the word. He signalizes himself at the expence of his superiours, who reward him accordingly. The best qualifications for rising in the army, with reasons why things were otherwise under another commander. 17

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL*'s master makes some close remarks on certain matters. The method which the general took to parry the officer.* CHRYSAL*'s master makes up the affair. The general gives the officer an opportunity of distinguishing himself, which he does in a signal manner.* 22

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL *accounts curiously for some interesting points of policy. He supports his reason for not entering into the particulars of the siege, by some remarks on war, more just perhaps than popular, and assigns a motive for courage, not likely to be meant by those who give it.* Page 30

CHAP. VII.

One of the captains under CHRYSAL'S *master behaves in an extraordinary manner, and vindicates himself as extraordinarily. His crime is over-looked for prudential reasons, which he mistakes, and demands a trial. He meets his deserts.* 34

CHAP. VIII.

CHRYSAL *accounts for the peculiar animosities, which some nations shew in war. A noble* SPANIARD *is taken prisoner in a sally. He makes a proposal to the general which is accepted, and opens a prospect of peace. A brutal outrage disappoints his design, and embroils matters more than ever.* 39

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL'S *attention is agreeably diverted by the appearance of a young* SPANIARD, *who throws himself at the feet of his master to*

prefer an extraordinary request. The History of DON ALPHONSO GUZMAN, *the young* SPANIARD. Page 44

CHAP. X.

Continued. OLIVIA'S *father is taken up by the inquisition, and herself put into a convent, on an* ENGLISH *battery's firing, upon which,* DON ALPHONSO *comes in despair to* CHRYSAL'S *master to make a very odd request, which he grants at length, and also promises him his assistance to obtain his mistress.* 52

CHAP. XI.

The fortunate effect of CHRYSAL'S *master's sparing the convent. The mutual advantages to victors and vanquished of articles of capitulation.* CHRYSAL'S *master performs his promise to* ALPHONSO, *into whose service* CHRYSAL *enters.* ALPHONSO *recovers his mistress, whose father is set at liberty by a piece of* FUN *of some* ENGLISH *sailors. Conclusion of the story of* ALPHONSO. CHRYSAL *changes his service.* 59

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL *makes some striking remarks on a state of absolute liberty. Disappointment of the hopes of the conquerours, with the natural*

tural consequences. CHRYSAL's *master going to take a taste of the pleasures of affluence, is flammed out of his treasure by a sutler, into whose service* CHRYSAL *enters.* Page 69

CHAP. XIII.

Character of CHRYSAL's *new master. The right way not to suffer by making mistakes. A curious conversation between* CHRYSAL's *master and two persons of consequence lays open the secrets of some interesting affairs. He makes up a foolish dispute by a sensible toast.* 73

CHAP. XIV.

Continued. The mysteries of agency; and convenience of a military government, with some curious notions of the genteelest ways of rising in life. 79

CHAP. XV.

Affecting consequences of carrying the foregoing schemes into execution; with the conclusion of the character and history of CHRYSAL's *master.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.* 86

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL's *master swallows a pill, and pleads an important cause without success. A curious method of parrying one false oath by another, with the first oath taken by the master of a merchant-man. He shews another,*

ther inſtance of his ſkill in ſteering clear of perjury, but without his former ſucceſs. His notion of conſcience. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* Page 92

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome reflections on the policy of impoſing oaths of exculpation. The proper method of preſerving the validity of oaths, with the conſequences of their being adminiſtred indiſcriminately to all perſons, and on all occaſions. An uncommon lecture from a captain of a man of war to his officers, repreſents ſome polite amuſements in an odd light.* 101

CHAP. XVIII.

The folly of a perſon's proſtituting his character to pleaſe his company, aggravated by the dangerous miſtake of ridicule for applauſe. CHRYSAL'*s maſter changes place with the chaplain, and preaches him an intereſting ſermon, in which, among remarks more juſt than polite, he gives an uncommon reaſon for the particular deformity of vice in women.* 107

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL *deſcribes true compaſſion; and ſhews the general conſequence of a man's acknowledging diſtreſs, with the reaſons of it.* CHRYSAL'*s maſter is prevailed upon by his captain*

to tell him the cauſe of his melancholy, which is removed by an act of uncommon generoſity. CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice.* Page 112

CHAP. XX.

Hiſtory of a lieutenant of a man of war. A compariſon between the rewards of merit, in the land, and ſea ſervices; with a remarkable inſtance of a great man's remembering an old friend. The conſequence of attempting to ſet up for a mender of manners, and of a man's not meeting an opportunity of making himſelf remarkable. 119

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon method of carrying on a war; with the danger of ſpeaking the truth too plainly, at an improper time. CHRYSAL's *maſter meets his brother. Some account of him. He repreſents certain matters in an odd light.* CHRYSAL *enters into his ſervice. Concluſion of his character* CHRYSAL *quits his ſervice on an uncommon occaſion, for one, from which he paſſes in the uſual courſe of buſineſs into that of the general.* 126

CONTENTS.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL's *master makes some characteristick reflections. He is surprized at the officer's refusing to make up matters; and gives a particular reason for some people's rising in the world. An extraordinary personage enters to him. Description of him. He gives a character of the native* AMERICANS; *and offers some interesting remarks on the return they make to the treatment they meet with; and on the practice of forming in the closet, plans of operations for armies in the field. Odd reason why the* AMERICANS *are desirous of gold.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.* Page 135

CHAP. II.

The manner in which CHRYSAL's *master was received by his subjects. Antiquated principles on which his authority was founded. His odd opinions and conduct in some important matters, with the consequences.* 147

CHAP. III.

CHRYSAL *describes his master's habitation and family. He makes an uncommon progress.*

The

The manner in which he found the females of his household engaged. Remarks on FINERY. *Account of their amusements, with the manner in which they usually ended. The method by which* CHRYSAL'*s master kept peace in his family.* Page 151

CHAP. IV.

CHRYSAL'*s master is honourably rewarded for his services. An unexpected meeting with one of his country-women, introduces an uncommon remark on a common matter. The lady gives an odd instance of conjugal love; and refuses the civil offer of* CHRYSAL'*s master, for a natural reason.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.* 158

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL'*s mistress gives some striking instances of female consistency. She is cured of her grief, by a person of accomplishments as extraordinary as her own. The advantage of comparative excellence.* CHRYSAL'*s mistress marries, and he changes his service, for that of an old master.* 165

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* ENGLAND. *His master is saluted by a sight not very pleasing. The history of the unfortunate hero of the day opens*

opens some mysterious scenes. THE OBVIOUS USE OF COUNCILS OF WAR. Page 170

CHAP. VII.

Continued. Consequence of the foregoing conduct. An extraordinary sentence attempted to be reversed in an extraordinary manner, and by as extraordinary persons. The reason of this; and why it miscarried. More mysteries. Just fate of the BUNGLERS, *who left their poor* TOOL *in the lurch; with the consequences of this affair to a certain chore.* 175

CHAP. VIII.

CHRYSAL *changes his service. He gets a view of a court of* CIVIL JUDICATURE, *on an extraordinary occasion. Some reflections out of the common cant on the delays of the law. A whimsical application of an old story produces the strange effect of putting a counsellor out of countenance. The necessity of absolute power in some governments; with a common decision, by which nothing is decided.* 183

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's *master joins a remarkable set of company. Their characters.* CHRYSAL *changes his service. Account of the enterprize on which his late master's companions were*

were going; with the convincing arguments they uſed to procure obedience to their commands. Page 189

CHAP. X.

The ruinous appearance of the ſcene of action ſupplies matter for mirth to thoſe whoſe trade it is to laugh at every thing. The point carried againſt law and reaſon. Enquiry into the cauſe of this. The riſe of the prejudice againſt the profeſſion of an actor. 194

CHAP. XI.

Continued. The common conſequence of exceſs of zeal. The profeſſed intent of theatrical repreſentations defeated by this abſurd prejudice againſt actors. The vices againſt which this prejudice is levelled, in reality the effects of it; with the means for remedying this, and other abuſes. 198

CHAP. XII.

The ſyſtem of policy by which CHRYSAL's *maſter governed his ſtate. Account of his methods of parrying poets. The reaſon why ſo few new plays are acted. Enquiry into the preſent ſtate of genius. The general motives for writing plays preclude them from ſucceſs. Managers*

Managers and poets equally in fault in their dealings with each other. Page 203

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter ſits in judgement on ſome pieces offered to him. A poet of faſhion enters. The arguments by which he ſupports his work againſt the objections of* CHRYSAL's *maſter, who makes ſome curious dramatical ſtrictures. The poet, driven from his laſt retreat, the intereſt of his great friends, by the common cant of the houſe's being* FULL *for the ſeaſon, departs in a rage, denouncing their reſentment, which* CHRYSAL's *maſter ſhews his reaſon not to fear the effects of.* 207

CHAP. XIV.

Continuation. CHRYSAL's *maſter rejects the work of a poet for his ignorance of the laws of the drama. More dramatical ſtrictures. The poet modeſtly inſiſts that his play is refuſed only becauſe it wants the intereſt of the great; and goes off in an huff. Another poet repulſed for his attachment to the laws of the drama. Arguments againſt theſe laws. The poet refuſes to conform to the preſent taſte; and makes an appeal. One more poet refuſed only for wanting every poetical talent. Remarks on ſomething that affects more than care to own it.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, on an occaſion not common.* 212

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL's *maſter engages in a genteel amour. A delicate way of refining pleaſure. His miſtreſs perſwades him that ſhe has poiſoned him, and herſelf. His ſituation on hearing this. Striking proofs of medical ſkill with the advantage of a regular courſe of practice. An exemplary inſtance of charity and forgiveneſs diverts the doctors attention to the murdereſs.* Page 219

CHAP. XVI.

The recovery of the murdereſs opens a new ſcene. She clears up the myſtery, leſs to the ſatisfaction of the doctors, than of their noble patient, who rewards her liberally for her good news; and ſends them off without their errand. Reflections on ſome genteel matters. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* 225

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter goes to be admitted into an extraordinary ſociety. Some reflections not ſuited to the taſte of the times. Riſe of this ſociety. A deſcription of a monaſtery, with an account of its members, and of ſome of its rules.* 231

CHAP.

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL's *master arrives at the monastery. The manner of his being admitted into the society. Character of his competitor. The method he took to revenge the society's injustice in prefering* CHRYSAL's *master to him. The mirth of the company disturbed by the entrance of* THE DEVIL, *just as he was invoked by* CHRYSAL's *master. The effect of such a visitor upon the company. The* DEVIL *fixes upon* CHRYSAL's *master in particular, and makes him squeak.* Page 236

CHAP. XIX.

The DEVIL *is degraded to a* BABOON, *and his appearance well accounted for, which restores the mirth and courage of the company, and particularly of* CHRYSAL's *master, who exerts himself to recover his character. The appearance of the be-deviled* BABOON *is traced next day to his introducer, who at the instance of* CHRYSAL's *master is expelled the society for presuming to ridicule their rites. Farther consequences of this affair make the superiour break up his monastery, and build a church.* 244

CHAP. XX.

A farther account of the rules of the convent; with some striking instances of œconomy. A seeming inconsistency accounted for, from a principle

principle not ſufficiently underſtood. Some remarkable effects of vanity. Reaſon of the abuſe of wealth. Page 50

CHAP. XXI.

Account of the members of the ſociety. The hiſtory of the ſuperiour. The particular qualifications by which he aroſe in life. Succeſs in a private inſtance encourages him to try his talents, in an higher ſphere, from which he ſoon deſcends with diſgrace. A ſtriking inconſiſtency in his character. 255

CHAP. XXII.

Continuation of the hiſtory of the ſuperiour. The inconſiſtency in his character accounted for. The reaſon of his being ſent early to travel for education. Political principles all neceſſary to be attended to, in a tutor. The method and effect of his tutor's care to inſtruct him in Religion. A frightful ſtory gives riſe to a frightful dream, which is interrupted ſtill more frightfully. A tremendous apparition terrifies him into a ſwoon. Account of the apparition. 259

CHAP. XXIII.

Continuation. Behaviour of the tutor on finding his pupil in a ſwoon. He recovers; and terrifies his tutor by miſtaking him for a ſaint. Charity begins at home. The tutor ſaga-

ſagaciouſly gueſſes at the meaning of the miſtake; and piouſly reſolves to improve it. The pupil's full and true account of the apparition, with the tutor's honeſt addition to it. His repentance, and converſion. His tutor moderates his zeal for weighty reaſons. He relapſes; and his tutor for private reaſons divulges the whole affair. The method he took to invalidate the ſtory. Page 265

CHAP. XXIV.

Account of the members continued. Hiſtory of one who turned libertine, in ſpeculation, after he had loſt the power of being ſo in practice. How this happened; the force of literary vanity; and the reaſon why it is ſtronger than any other. Inſtances of the advantages reaped from encouraging genius. A new method of flattery is ſucceſsful where all others had failed, and by a maſter-ſtroke makes vanity gain a ſignal triumph over virtue. 272

CHRY-

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

CHAP. I.

Introduction. CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice. His maſter finds an ingenious excuſe for returning home; but is unexpectedly ſtoped ſhort by the way. In the common courſe of buſineſs,* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice: Character of his new maſter.*

(*THERE being a war between* SPAIN *and* ENGLAND, CHRYSAL *in the ſhape of a* DOUBLOON *is preſented by a* SPANISH *governour to the captain of an* ENGLISH *man of war cruiſing off the coaſt of* MEXICO, *in return for his quitting his ſtation to give him an opportunity of ſending the treaſure to* EUROPE.)

" As this was a compliment of great con-
" ſequence to the *Spaniards*, the captain had
" been ſo handſomely conſidered for it, that
" his deſires were ſatisfied, and he only wiſh-
" ed to be ſafe at home to enjoy the wealth
" he had ſo happily acquired."—*Vol.* 1.—*Page* 53.

However impatient though he might be to return, it was neceſſary for him to find ſome pretence to juſtify a conduct ſo contrary to his duty, the time appointed for his continuing on that ſtation, not being near expired.

But a proper knowledge of the world is never at a loſs for expedients. He immediately came to a right underſtanding with the maſter of the ſhip, who alarming him ſuddenly at midnight with an account that her *ſtern-poſt* was looſe, and the reſt of the officers between ſleeping and waking formally ſigning his report without examining, he *bore away* directly for home with an happy heart, anticipating in imagination the enjoyment of all thoſe pleaſures, which he had hitherto looked at with a longing eye, from a diſtance.

When man, confiding in his own wiſdom, quits the ſtraight path to ſtrike out a nearer to his wiſhes, he generally blunders into that which leads directly to their diſappointment. My maſter had not proceeded many days on his voyage, when he *fell in* one morning

juſt

juſt at the dawn, with a mighty fleet, from which it was impoſſible for him to eſcape. His anxiety made him inſtantly conclude them enemies. He curſed his fate in the bitterneſs of his ſoul, and leaving the care of the ſhip to his officers, pretended to be ſick, and threw himſelf on his bed in agonies little ſhort of deſpair. "Was it for "this?" (exclaimed he wringing his hands, and gnaſhing his teeth) "was it for this I "betrayed my truſt, and favoured the ene-"mies whom I was ſent to diſtreſs? — For "this did I put my honour in the power of "a venal wretch, and deſert my ſtation, in "direct diſobedience to my orders? But I "am juſtly rewarded! I have ſtopped at no-"thing to gather wealth, and now I loſe "that and my liberty together. May every "villain meet the ſame fate!"

But the ſeverity of his diſtreſs laſted not long. As ſoon as it was clear day, the fleet which cauſed his fears was found to be *Engliſh*; the moment he was informed of which he recovered from his ſickneſs, and putting the beſt face he could upon the matter went to wait upon the Admiral.

Though the fleet which the Admiral commanded was irreſiſtibly ſuperiour to any that could poſſibly be oppoſed to it, he was ſo deſirous of every addition of ſtrength, that he received my maſter with evident pleaſure; and never enquiring what had been the cauſe

of his quitting his ſtation, informed him whither they were going, and congratulated him on the opportunity he ſhould have of making his fortune.

But this opportunity, promiſing as it might appear, had no temptations for my maſter, whoſe thoughts were turned another way. However, to carry off the chagrin which he could not conceal, he expreſſed his concern in the ſtrongeſt terms at not being able to bear a part in ſo glorious an enterprize, and produced the *report* of the condition of his ſhip, by which ſhe was repreſented to be incapable of ſervice, the reaſon, as he alledged, for his having quitted his proper ſtation. This inſtantly changed the whole ſcene. The Admiral, aſſuming all the conſequence of his unbounded authority, anſwered with a ſupercilious look, that he would order the ſhip to be ſurveyed by the proper officers, and then turned away without deigning to take any farther notice of him.

As this was no more than my maſter had expected, his knowledge of the world, which brought him into the ſcrape, ſoon ſuggeſted the proper means for preventing any diſagreeable conſequences from it. Accordingly, when the *ſurvey* was regularly made next morning, he was *honourably* acquitted; but the maſter of the ſhip was broke *for his errour*, and the other officers ſeverely rebuked, for not

not having examined his report before they *ſign'd* it.

In the courſe of theſe tranſactions, I changed my ſervice for that of the Admiral's ſecretary, who directly gave me to the Admiral in ſome dealings between them.

When I entered into the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, he was lolling in a liſtleſs manner on a ſofa, in his *ſtate room*, where every art was exerted to counteract nature, and elude the mid-day heat, in one of the fierceſt climates of the Torrid Zone. A gown of thinneſt ſilk hung loolely over his large limbs; the radiance of the ſun was ſoftened by ſhades of linen drawn before the open windows, and kept conſtantly wet to cool the air as it entered through them; and every diſagreeable ſavour was drowned in the moſt delicate perfumes.

The contraſt between ſuch magnificent luxury, and the condition of thoſe, whoſe numbers made his ſtrength, ſhewed in the moſt glaring light the infatuation of vanity, in diſplaying ſuch temptations to its own deſtruction, as the moſt implicit obedience to laws could hardly be ſuppoſed proof to.

The aukwardneſs with which my maſter bore his ſtate ſhewing that it was not natural to him, I looked back to his paſt life to ſee by what illuſtrious actions he had riſen to ſuch an exalted ſtation; but to my ſurprize diſcovered that the foundation of his fortune

had been no more than a *phlegmatic indolence*, and *ſervility of ſoul* which induced his ſuperiours to entruſt power in his hands, without apprehenſion of its raiſing him to a conſequence that might claſh with their deſigns on any future occaſion.

I ſee you are aſtoniſh'd that a perſon of ſuch a turn ſhould ever engage in active ſcenes, or be entruſted with the conduct of an enterprize ſo oppoſite to his diſpoſition, as to make ſucceſs improbable. To unexperienc'd reaſon ſuch things muſt ſeem unaccountable; but the leaſt acquaintance with the ways of man, would ſoon reconcile you to greater abſurdities. The *convenience* of the parent, not the *genius* of the child is in general the only thing conſider'd in the choice of a profeſſion on which the ſucceſs of life depends; and this is the reaſon why ſo few are eminent in things ſo eaſy to be eminent in; and when at length a perſon may have it in his power to quit a profeſſion which he did not chuſe, it is too late for him to chuſe another, and therefore he plods on with habitual indifference, not knowing what elſe to do with himſelf.

This may remove your ſurprize as far as it concerns my maſter's firſt entering into, and continuing in ſuch a way of life. As to his fitneſs for ſo difficult and important a command, that was the thing leaſt thought of, when it was entruſted to him. The *ſigni-*

ſignificancy of his character, and his *ſervility* to his ſuperiours pointed him out as the perſon proper for their purpoſe, as they not only made them ſecure that he would not go beyond their orders, but would alſo put it in their power to arrogate to themſelves the merit of ſucceſs, or lay the blame of miſcarriage upon him; and for theſe great qualifications only did they chuſe him on this occaſion to execute *the deſign of another*, who had been guilty of the unpardonable crime of ſhewing that he knew more than themſelves, and whoſe penetration and activity of ſoul might too probably have made him ſee through their deſigns, and puſh matters farther than was conſiſtent with them.

CHAP. II.

Motives of the enterprize in which CHRYSAL'S *maſter was engaged. In a private conference between him and his agent, ſome curious ſecrets, in a buſineſs not generally underſtood, are laid open, and a ſeeming contradiction naturally reconciled.*

WHENEVER *England* is at war with any of her neighbours, the effects are felt to the extremities of the globe. The armament which my maſter

now commanded was ſent againſt one of the moſt important and wealthieſt ſettlements of the *Spaniards* in that part of the world; not indeed with an ambitious deſign of annexing it to the ſtate, or reimburſing any part of the expences of the war, but merely to diſtreſs the enemy by its deſtruction, and enrich thoſe immediately employed in the conqueſt; the proſpect of which, and the conſequent ſchemes to accompliſh it, ſo entirely engroſſed the attention of them all, except my maſter, that they diſregarded the difficulties, and ran ſo eagerly into the dangers of the attempt, though ſuch and ſo many as were ſufficient to have damped the ardour of any beings directed by reaſon, and not inſenſible to the firſt principle of human action, that his phlegmatic diſpoſition was no impediment to their ſucceſs, as it left them at liberty to purſue ſuch meaſures as the inſtant occaſion ſhould ſhew to be expedient, without the delay of conſulting him. —— I ſay, "except my maſter;" for not all the cares of ſo extenſive a command, all the hurry and buſtle around him could ever ruffle the characteriſtic ſtagnation of his mind.

He was juſt awoke from his noon-tide nap, when his Clerk laid the bag *in which I was* upon his table, along with ſome papers. The chink of the gold inſtantly attracted his attention. "Eh!" (ſaid he rubbing his eyes and yawning) "what is it "o'clock?"

" o'clock ?" — And being told, " Aye (continued he, ſtretching and yawning aga " I thought I had overſlept myſelf, I am " heavy! This climate is fit for nothi " but ſleeping." —— Then riſing languid " What papers are thoſe ?" (ſaid he) " D " I not ſay, I would not be troubled abc " buſineſs ?"

" The *ſurvey of that ſhip*, and your o " accounts, for the *out-ſets* of this expe " tion," (anſwered the Clerk) " which if y " pleaſe you had better look over now, as " ſhall have others to attend to ſoon. I " ſorry to ſay it does not anſwer your " pectations, but the people alledged t " they had been made to pay ſo extra " gantly for their *contracts*, that it was " poſſible for them to ſink the qualities " the ſtores ſo low, as to be able to give " any thing worth your acceptance."

" Not able to give me any thing!" the Admiral, who had been rouſed from lethargic indifference, by the firſt mentic his own affairs) " They lie, the ſcound " and I'll make them know it. The " *liſts* ſhew that they have ſunk them " a vengeance, and beyond every degr " reaſon; and if they think that I'll " nive at their murdering the men, w " having any ſhare in the profit, they " find themſelves damnedly *out in their* " *ing*; and therefore do you go direc

" every Purſer in the fleet, and order them " to have a *ſurvey* privately made of their " worſt ſtores, to produce when I call for it. " I'll make them *come down*, and handſomely " too, or they ſhall repent it."——

" But, Sir, is there not danger of their be- " ing provoked by ſuch an attack, to ſay " *ſomething improper*; and that *they who* " *made the contracts* with them may do you " an ill office on another occaſion? There " are *wheels within wheels.*"——

" Let them, if they can!" (anſwered the Admiral, clapping his hands a-kimbo) " I " ſhall trouble them no more. If I mind " my *bits*, this *trip*, I ſhall be as rich as the " beſt of them, and will ſtay at home, and " take my eaſe, as well as they; and as to " their ſpeaking, whom are they to ſpeak " to? Tell my brother that I am a knave! " No! no! we ſhall hardly hear tales of " each other. Things hang too cloſe to- " gether for that. Do you therefore mind " your buſineſs, and leave theſe matters to " me."—

" But may not they ſpread ſtories abroad, " which may injure your character with the " publick?"——

" My character? Not in the leaſt. Such " ſtories affect only the *Clerks*, and ſuch low " people, whoſe *perquiſites* theſe things are " *reputed* to be, and who only appear in " them; but that can't be ſaid to injure

" them

"them neither; *for what Clerk ever had a "character that could be injured?* Hah! hah! "hah! So that your care for characters, for- "ſooth, is quite unneceſſary. Do what you "will, you cannot ſuffer in that All you "have to do is to mind your buſineſs; and "when you have got money, no one will "enquire about your character."——

Saying this he waved his hand to the Clerk to withdraw, and then walking a turn or two about his *great cabbin* opened the money-bag, and telling the contents, put a few pieces, *among which I was*, into his pocket, and locked up the reſt in his ſtrong box, after which he threw himſelf again on the ſofa, to reſt after the fatigue of ſo much buſineſs.

You ſeem at a loſs how to reconcile the ſentiments which my maſter diſcovered in this conference, with the luxury and magnificence of every thing about him. But they contradict not each other in the leaſt. In the tranſactions with his Clerk, he ſhewed the genuine motions of his heart; but with the other he has nothing to do. They are entirely at the expence of the publick, though in a manner not obvious to every eye, being a kind of tax eſtabliſhed by cuſtom on the *Purſers* of men of war, under the appearance indeed of a *preſent* to their commanders, but in reality as a *bribe* for conniving at their impoſitions; and this tax it is that enables thoſe commanders to live up to their rank,

which their juſt pay would never do: a ſtriking inſtance of that wiſe *œconomy*, which *to ſave a penny lays a man under a neceſſity of ſtealing a pound.*

CHAP. III.

The behaviour of CHRYSAL*'s maſter on hearing an intereſting piece of news, with his conciſe method of conducting an enterprize.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of a perſon of a very different character. An eloquent ſpeech produces the uſual effects of eloquence.*

MY *new* maſter had not paſſed his time long in this agreeable manner, when the Officer next to him in command entered haſtily, and told him in a tranſport of joy, that the man at his maſt-head, had *made* the land.

"What land?" (ſaid my maſter, unmoved at the news, or the manner in which it was delivered by the other, whoſe eyes flaſhed fire as he ſpoke) "What land does he "*make?*"

"The place of our deſtination!" (replied the Officer:) "I had juſt then taken an ob- "ſervation myſelf, and am convinced I am "right."——

"Well

"Well then," (returned my maſter) "if "you are ſure it is the place, here are your "inſtructions. You are to lead the van, and "cover the landing, about which proper "directions will be given by the General; "When that is done you ſhall have farther "orders."—Then ſwelling with the thought of his own conſequence, and reſolving to ſupport his dignity by an uncommon effort of generoſity, "Has the fellow (ſaid he) "been rewarded for his news?"

"Not yet" (anſwered the officer;) "the "moment I heard it, I ran up myſelf to the "maſt-head, and as ſoon as I was convinced "he was right, flew to acquaint you. But "I ſhall remember him, when I go back."

"And pray when you do, give him *this* "in my name," (replied my maſter, putting his hand into his pocket, and reaching *me* to him;) "the men's ſpirits muſt be kept up. "We ſhall have warm work of it; warm "work!"——

"Glorious work!" (added the officer) "the trophies of your fame will now be eſ- "tabliſhed in the oppoſite extremities of the "globe. Few attain to ſuch happineſs."

"Aye!" (ſaid the Admiral, puffing and ſweating with the ſenſe of his great atchieve- ments) "I have done ſomething to be talk- "ed of in more places than one. I have "endured the ſeverities of various climates, "But we muſt bear every thing in the ſer-

"vice

" vice of our country! We muſt bear every " thing without complaining."

" Have you any farther commands, ſir?" (ſaid the officer) " It is proper I ſhould be on " board. I ſee ſeveral of the ſhips have " now made the ſignal of ſeeing land."—

" Nothing more at this time" (anſwered the Admiral.) " You have your orders, and " will take the beſt method to execute them. " *Only obſerve to keep as clear as poſſible of* " *that other man's ſcheme. I had rather all* " *ſhould miſcarry, than appear in the leaſt in-* " *debted to him for ſucceſs.*"

My *new* maſter on this withdrew, leaving the Admiral to enjoy the contemplation of his own conſequence, and keep himſelf cool till dinner.

If the indolence of my late maſter was inconſiſtent with his ſtation, the activity of my preſent ſeemed to exceed the abilities of an human being. The moment he got to his own ſhip he made a ſignal for all the Captains in his diviſion, and the General, to come on board him; and then ordering his ſhip's crew to be called *aft*, he went to the *barricadoes*, and waving his hat over his head, " Courage my lads! (ſaid he) the day " is ours. The Admiral has given us leave " to take yonder town with all the treaſure " in it, ſo that we have nothing to do now, " but make our fortunes as faſt as we can, " for the place can never hold out againſt " us.

" us. The Purſer will give every brave " fellow a can of punch to drink proſperity " to old *England*, and then we'll go about " our buſineſs with ſpirit. We ſhall all be " as rich as Jews. The place is paved with " gold, which the lubberly *Dons* have ga- " thered for us. Old *England* for ever is " the word, and the day is ours."

This eloquent harangue had the effect that eloquence uſually has, *it tranſported the hear- ers out of their ſenſes.* They anſwered with three chears, which made the welkin ring, and then went ſkipping and dancing with joy to get their punch; a foretaſte of their good fortune, which many of them would not have given up for all their expectations.

As they were going off, my maſter hap- pened to ſee among the croud the man who had firſt diſcovered the land, and calling to him, " Here, ſhip-mate," (ſaid he, giving him a Doubloon) " here is ſomething the Ad- " miral has ſent you for your good *look-* " *out*; and take this alſo from me; (giving " him another) and I hope to give you an " hundred more for hoiſting your colours on " the top of yonder walls."——

" Aye! noble Captain," (ſaid the Sailor, ſhrugging his ſhoulders, and making his beſt bow) " and ſo I will, or it ſhall coſt me a " worſe fall, than from the main-top-gallant- " maſt-head, that is when the ſhip takes *a* " *heel.* I'll pull down proud *Spain*, and " clap old *England* in its place."

The

The ſpirit which my maſter ſhewed in every word and action intereſted me ſo far in his favour, that I was pleaſed at his not having parted with me on this occaſion.

By this time the General and the Captains were come on board, and being ſhewn into the great cabbin, "Good news, gentle-"men," (ſaid my maſter in an extacy, ſhaking every one of them by the hand as they entered) "I bring you good news! Yon-"der is the object of our hopes, the place "that is to make our fortunes, and crown "us with glory, if it is not our own faults, "for the Admiral has given us general or-"ders to proceed in the beſt manner we "can, and without loſing time or oppor-"tunity in waiting to conſult him on every "occaſion."

This news filled them all with the higheſt ſpirits. They congratulated each other on a ſucceſs of which they made no doubt; and having concerted the meaſures proper to be taken, returned to their ſhips to carry them into inſtant execution.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

The general profeſſes an uncommon motive for military ardour. An officer deſires to ſpeak with him, the mention of whoſe name opens ſome ſecrets in the ſervice. Account of the officer. An extraordinary inſtance of ignorance of the word. He ſignalizes himſelf at the expence of his ſuperiours, who reward him accordingly. The beſt qualifications for riſing in the army, with reaſons why things were otherwiſe under another commander.

AS ſoon as the Captains of the men of war were gone, "Now my deareſt "friend" (ſaid my maſter to the General, who ſtaid) "You will have an opportunity "not only of gaining ſuch glory as will "add luſtre to the dignity of your birth, "but alſo of acquiring a fortune to ſupport "that dignity properly."

"True!" (anſwered the General eagerly) "But powerful as theſe motives are, my "heart is ſtimulated by one ſtill ſtronger, on "this happy occaſion."——

"How! can any motive be ſtronger than honour, and independance?"——

"Yes, gratitude! grateful anxiety to prove "myſelf not unworthy of his favour, who "procured

" procured me this opportunity. He pro-
" moted my intereſt with the ardour of a
" friend. He ſupported it with his whole
" weight; and in a manner ſtaked his ho-
" nour for my abilities. Till I have ac-
" quitted him therefore, by a ſignal diſcharge
" of my duty, I can have no thought for
" myſelf."——

" Theſe ſentiments prove you worthy of
" his favour; nor can you poſſibly ſerve
" yourſelf more, than by paying this debt
" honourably to him, in which I ſhall think
" myſelf happy to give you every inſtance
" of that aſſiſtance, which the nature of
" my command ſo fortunately puts in my
" power."——

" I doubt you not; and therefore as our
" unanimity deprives us of the excuſe of
" diſagreement, which former commanders
" in the different ſervices have made for
" their miſcarriages, we muſt be doubly
" careful not omit any thing, that can en-
" ſure ſucceſs."

The friends then embraced with ardour, and were juſt ſeparating to attend the buſi-neſs of their different departments, when a ſubaltern officer deſired to ſpeak with the General. On hearing his name, " Did you " not know that I am engaged?" (ſaid the General, with an embarraſſed air) " He muſt " wait, till I am at leiſure."

" Don't

" Don't let me hinder you," (ſaid my maſter) " I am juſt going."——

" You do not, in the leaſt. He can have " no buſineſs with me, but what you may " hear; and indeed what you muſt help me " to extricate myſelf from; for I know he " comes upon ſome ſcheme of *diſtinguiſhing* " himſelf, that will only give me trouble."—

" How can that be? If you do not ap- " prove of what he propoſes, ſurely you " have it in your power to reject it, without " fear of giving him offence; or if, on the " other hand, you think it practicable, and " worth purſuing, I cannot ſuppoſe that any " honour or advantage that can poſſibly ac- " crue to him, can make you unwilling to " carry it into execution."——

" Moſt certainly not. The difficulty I " am under is of a very different nature. " The character of the man gives me rea- " ſon to believe, that he will not propoſe " any thing, which is not both practicable, " and important; and as it is not in my " power to reward his ſucceſs, his doing any " thing out of the common courſe of duty " would involve me in the higheſt diſtreſs, " both on account of the injuſtice to him, " and the poor figure I muſt make myſelf " on ſo flagrant a breach of my own pub- " lick declaration, *that in the diſpoſal of all* " *preferments, I would pay due reſpect to ſeni-*

" *ority,*

" *ority, where ſuperiour merit did not give a* " *ſtronger claim.*"——

" Well! and why ſhould it not be in your " power to fulfil that declaration?"——

" My deareſt friend, I bluſh to think of, " much more to expoſe even to you the " mortifying hardſhips laid upon me. The " truth is, I have, ſince I made that decla- " ration, another Officer, who was in his " cradle ſince this has been in the army, " and has never yet ſeen the face of an ene- " my, put upon me for the firſt preferment, " by one whoſe directions I muſt not diſ- " obey, however detrimental to the ſer- " vice."——

" That is a diſagreeable circumſtance, I " own. But who is this Officer, your good " opinion of whom gives you ſuch appre- " henſions?"——

" He is a military enthuſiaſt, *who knows* " *ſo little of the world, as to think of riſing* " *in the army by merit alone*; and with that " view, not ſatisfied with doing his duty in " the moſt ſignal manner, is always a vo- " lunteer, wherever he thinks any glory " can he acquired; though his own partic- " cular experience, as well as general obſer- " vation might have long ſince convinced " him of the folly of ſuch a thought. You " muſt know him. This is he, who in that " unlucky affair upon the coaſt of *France*, " made a ſtand with the ſingle company to

" which

" which he belonged, (and which he had ſo
" attached to him by giving out of his own
" pocket to ſuch as behaved well, a daily
" gratuity in addition to their pay, that they
" would follow him any where) to cover the
" embarkation of the troops, while every
" Officer was ſhifting for himſelf, as he ac-
" tually did in a great meaſure, till moſt of
" his little party was cut off, as it was a
" thouſand to one, but they all muſt, un-
" ſupported as they were; though it appear-
" ed after, that if a proper force had been
" poſted in that very place at firſt, or he
" reinforced in any time, the heavy loſs, and
" diſgrace ſuffered on that occaſion, might
" have been prevented. But ſtill that was
" reckoned no buſineſs of his; and therefore
" all the reward he got for his pains was to
" have two Officers, *who were not even in*
" *the action*, put over his head, and the com-
" pany's money, which he had loſt along
" with all his own baggage, *refuſed to be*
" *made good to him becauſe he was a voluntier*
" *on that attack.* For (ſorry I am to ſay it!)
" that is not the way to riſe in the army now
" o'days. Where a man has not intereſt to
" puſh him forward, *being able to ſing a good*
" *ſong*, or *pimp well*, or *having an handſome*
" *wife*, or *ſiſter*, with a proper degree of
" humility, and complaiſance, will avail him
" more than all the courage and conduct in
" romance. In my patron's time indeed

" things

" things were not ſo. Brave himſelf, he " expected that every man under him ſhould " be brave alſo; nor would let any recom- " mendation compenſate for the want of " merit, in thoſe who ſought his favour; *as* " *his own intereſt and honour were naturally,* " *and inſeparably connected with thoſe of his* " *country*; *and he was not lifted up to power,* " *only to be the tool of a party*; *nor obliged* " *to ſupport himſelf in it, by intrigue, with-* " *out any other view or motive than that of* " *amaſſing its emoluments*; and therefore it has " been the great misfortune of this officer, " that he never ſerved immediately under " him.

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL's *maſter makes ſome cloſe remarks on certain matters. The method which the general took to parry the officer.* CHRYSAL's *maſter makes up the affair. The general gives the officer an opportunity of diſtinguiſhing himſelf, which he does in a ſignal manner.*

IT is remarked that men ſeldom enquire into the cauſes of things, continually before their eyes. Habitual acquaintance prevents

vents that curiosity, which is one of the strongest incentives to knowledge. They have always seen such things; and therefore have never enquired how they came to be so.

My master, who had long observed the fact, but never thought of the cause, was struck with what his friend said. After some pause, "I am afraid what you say is "too true! (said he) and cannot help at- "tributing it to a cause, not much to the "credit of the commanders, who certainly "would never discourage merit in others, "were they not conscious that they had not "risen by it themselves; and therefore look "upon it with an envious eye, as a reproach "to them. Indeed, it can scarcely be ex- "pected, that *a General, who has spent his "life in paying court to a minister, or fa- "vourite, or who was prefer'd only for his "interest in parliament*, should act otherwise. "But what will you do with this officer? "It will have an odd look, if you don't see "him; at the same time, if he should pro- "pose any thing of real consequence, I am "absolutely at a loss how to advise you to "act."——

"The only method, I can think of, is this. "His temper is warm; and his notions of "honour punctiliously high. I will there- "fore receive him with a distance, that I "know will hurt his sensibility, and pro- "voke him to say something, of which I "may

" may take advantage to break off the con-
" ference, without entering into the ſubject
" of his coming; for he ſpeaks as boldly
" as he acts; and thinks it beneath him to
" ſoften his ſentiments by any qualifying
" expreſſion."

Accordingly the General ordered the officer to be admitted, and aſking him ſlightly what was his buſineſs, "I come, Sir, (anſwered he) to inform you that I have diſcovered a proper place for landing the troops, and formed a plan for that purpoſe."

"You have diſcovered, Sir!" (interrupted the General haughtily) "Pray when, and how did you make this notable diſcovery?"

"Juſt now, Sir!" (returned the Officer,) too intent upon the object he had in view to take notice of the manner of his reception. "The *tranſport*, in which I was, happening to *ſtretch away a-head*, I got out a boat, and have carefully reconnoitred a great part of the coaſt, in the thick of the enemy's fire."

"And pray, Sir," (interrupted the general again, determined not to let him explain himſelf) "Who gave you orders to reconnoitre in this manner?"

"No one, Sir!" (anſwered the officer warmly, and hurt at the manner, in which the General ſpoke) "I never wait for orders, to do any thing in which my own ſafety

"only

" only is concerned, when I think it for the " advantage of the ſervice."

" When you think !" (retorted the General ſternly) " I ſhould be glad to know who has " appointed you to judge of thoſe things. " At this rate the whole army will be ge- " nerals by and bye; and every one will be " out reconnoitring forſooth, when they " ſhould be at their poſts; but I'll put a " ſtop to ſuch contempt of diſcipline, and " make you know, that it is your duty to " wait for orders, not to go rambling thus, " wherever you pleaſe."—Saying which he called one of his *Aide de Camps*, and putting the Officer in arreſt, ſent him away burſting with indignation and reſentment to his ſhip.

When he was gone, " I am very ſorry" (ſaid my maſter) " that your engagement to " that other man laid you under a neceſſity " of treating this Officer ſo harſhly. I have " conceived a very good opinion of him; " he appeared to be actuated by true zeal; " and ſpoke with a confidence, that ſhewed " he was convinced of what he ſaid; for " which reaſon, I am reſolved to recon- " noitre that place myſelf, and don't doubt, " but I ſhall find his account of it to be " juſt."——

" Nor do I, in the leaſt. He has an head " to plan, and an heart to execute the moſt " important enterprize; and I am as ſorry " for what I have been forced to do as you.

" But as ſoon as I have it in my power to " reward his merit, I'll give him every op- " portunity of diſplaying it, till when this " affair will keep him out of the way."

I ſee you are anxious to know the ſequel of this Officer's ſtory. To avoid breaking the thread of my narrative with it, therefore, at another time, I will conclude it here.

My maſter, as he ſaid, went that very night and reconnoitred the place pointed out by the Officer, whoſe account of it proved ſo juſt, that he repaired to him directly, and enquiring into his plan for landing the troops, found it ſo judicious, that he immediately adopted the whole, and carried it into execution with ſucceſs.

After ſome days, when the Officer's impatience of being idle thus in the midſt of action, had in a great meaſure got the better of his reſentment, and the ſevere loſs ſuſtained in the ſiege made the worth of men more attended to, my maſter attacked him on his *foible*, his paſſion for glory, and zeal for the ſervice of his country, and prevailed on him to return to his duty, on the General's making an apology for what he had done, which he attributed to his anxiety, and apprehenſion of the enemy's being put on their guard by his reconnoitring in that daring manner; and to cancel the diſgrace of the arreſt, treated him with particular attention; and as he was now at liberty to do

juſtice

juſtice to his merit, (the other, who had been impoſed upon him, being provided for) gave him the firſt opportunity he could of ſignalizing himſelf, which he did in a manner, that amply juſtified the opinion my maſter had conceived of him.

The affair was this. The General had reſolved to make an attack upon the principal redoubt, that defended the fortreſs, and gave the command of it to him. The plan laid down by the General was that an Officer with a party of men ſhould go from another poſt, juſt before the dawn to reconnoitre the redoubt, and if he found that the fire of the night had made the impreſſion expected, a ſignal was to be given for this Officer to advance and make the attack. The other accordingly marched but miſſed his way, and falling in with a leſſer redoubt miſtook it for the object of his deſignation, and inconſiderately attacked it, upon which the ſignal was given for this Officer to proceed. The alarm had ſet the ſoldiers in the principal redoubt upon their guard, which he perceiving before he came within their ſhot, and being ſenſible that his attempt could ſucceed only by ſurprize, by one of thoſe inſtantaneous efforts of genius, which mark the true military character, he reſolved, without a moment's heſitation that might diſcover his diſappointment, to try a ſtratagem of his own, ſince that of his General had been fruſtrated

by this miſtake, and directed his march regularly toward the attack that was begun upon the leſſer redoubt, as if he had been ſent on purpoſe to ſupport it.

Deceived by this feint, the Officer who commanded in the principal redoubt knowing the force there to be too weak to make reſiſtance, ſent the greater part of his own to their relief. This was what he had foreſeen. He therefore continued his march ſlowly, till they had got beyond him; and then facing ſuddenly about, puſhed with all ſpeed for the redoubt, they had thus abandoned. The moment they ſaw this motion, they turned back, but the narrowneſs of the entrenchment, in which they were, prevented their making ſuch expedition, and coming up in a body, as his men did on the plain, ſo that he entered with the very foremoſt man of them, and made himſelf maſter of the place, with inconſiderable loſs.

The importance of this redoubt, the taking of which greatly facilitated the operations of the ſiege, enhanced the merit of the action. Nothing elſe was talked of in the army, where the fortune of this Officer was looked upon to be made. But no opportunity offered for promoting him during the remainder of the expedition, ſo that the only reward in the General's power to give him, was thanking him publickly at the head of the army, which he did in the ſtrongeſt terms.

terms. Reſolved however to be the inſtrument of his promotion, tho' he could not promote him himſelf, he repreſented him, on his return, in ſo advantageous a light to one, *whoſe inclination it was known to be, and who from his office ſhould have had it in his power to reward merit*, that he promiſed to do him juſtice.

But the delicacy of the Officer's ſenſe of honour defeated theſe generous intentions. He would not accept of the preferment offered him, without having, at the ſame time, reparation for the injuſtice he had ſuffered, by an honourary rank ſuperiour to thoſe, who had been put over him: and when this was refuſed, *for reaſons of convenience*, inſiſted on quitting the ſervice, in the permiſſion for which, his patron did juſtice to his character in the moſt authentick manner, before he himſelf reſigned an office, which he would hold no longer, than it was in his power to fulfil the declaration he had made on accepting it, "*that while he ſhould be in that office*, "*he would not only be a vigilant ſervant of the* "*crown, but alſo a faithful truſtee, for the* "*honeſt claim of the brave, and deſerving of-*"*ficer.*"

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL *accounts curiouſly for ſome intereſting points of policy. He ſupports his reaſon for not entering into the particulars of the ſiege, by ſome remarks on war, more juſt perhaps than popular; and aſſigns a motive for courage, not likely to be meant by thoſe who give it.*

I HAVE been ſo particular in the ſtory of this Officer, in order to give you ſome notion of matters, with which your manner of life has made you unacquainted. In his fate you ſee the conſequence of a ſubaltern's ſtriving to diſtinguiſh himſelf, by doing any thing more than his immediate duty.

This, however ſtrange it may appear to you, who judge only from reaſon, is ſtrictly conſiſtent with the principles of modern policy, which is calculated entirely for private convenience, without the leaſt regard to publick good. Every attempt of the kind is taken for an affront by his ſuperiours, as implying a deſign of forcing them to promote him, and putting himſelf in competition with them for the good opinion of the publick, and therefore diſcountenanced.

Indeed

Indeed if it were otherwiſe, few men of fortune or intereſt would according to the preſent way of thinking go into the army at all, *as they could not expect to enjoy their eaſe, or ſhew a prudent regard to their ſafety*, without being ſubject to diſgraceful compariſons from the *officious aſſiduity, or raſhneſs* of every man, deſperate in diſpoſition or circumſtances, who diſregarded life, and all its pleaſures, or had no way of being able to live, but by hazarding the loſs of them.

In former times men entered into the profeſſion of arms, with a certain proſpect of honour and advantage, if they could merit them, and therefore exerted all their abilities of mind and body, in emulation for ſo tempting a prize; but now, every idler, who is unfit for any other buſineſs, *purchaſes* a commiſſion in order *to live upon the pay*; and as he is ſenſible that no efforts of his own can procure an addition to that pay, by raiſing him to an higher rank, he is ſatisfied to enjoy his bargain as eaſily as he can, and do no more than he needs muſt to avoid loſing it. And this will account to you for the difference between the *Engliſh* forces, now, and in thoſe days. Nor is the caſe otherwiſe with thoſe, who get into the army by intereſt. They depend ſolely upon the ſame intereſt to puſh them forward, and therefore give themſelves no trouble to deſerve promotion, which they are convinced no deſert could procure

them.—But to quit reflections not likely to be regarded, and return to my ſtory.

You muſt not expect a minute detail of the progreſs of this enterprize. The operations of war are too confuſed to give pleaſure to reaſon in the repreſentation, too horrid not to give pain to humanity.

I ſee you think this too ſevere: But that is the effect of prejudice. When the victories, which have been blazoned higheſt, and reflected the greateſt honour on thoſe, who gained them, are ſtripped of the falſe colouring, laid on only to dazle, and deceive, and examined coolly, moſt of them will be found owing to ſome unforeſeen accident, ſome lucky improvement of a blunder of the enemy, or elſe an obſtinate perſeverance in their own, after every boaſted rule of art had been broke through, every reſource of judgment exhauſted in vain; and to have been attended by circumſtances of ſuch miſery, and loſs to victors as well as vanquiſhed, as tarniſhed all their glory, and infinitely over-ballanced every advantage poſſible to be gained by them. I ſhall therefore mention only ſuch particulars, as may contribute to illuſtrate this picture of the heart of man.

The ardour ſhewn by the Subaltern officers and private men in carrying on the ſiege, in which they ſuffered more from the inclemencies of a climate unnatural to them, and againſt which no proper proviſion had been made though they had been delayed to meet

its

its fierceſt fury, as well as from the diſeaſes cauſed by the badneſs of every neceſſary of life, than from all the efforts of the enemy; all the arts which the ingenuity of man has deviſed for the deſtruction of his own unhappy ſpecies, was impoſſible to be accounted for, from any other principle, than *diſregard to a life deſtitute of every comfort and convenience that could endear it*; a remark, which to the humane wiſdom of ſome may ſeem to juſtify the deficiency, and badneſs of every kind of proviſion too generally made for them on ſuch occaſions; while thoſe, whoſe higher rank may be thought to animate them with a ſenſe of honour, and ambitious hope, and who therefore may be thought not to want ſuch incitements to deſperation, enjoy a luxury ſcarce to be reconciled with the confuſion of ſuch an unſettled ſtate: that neither of theſe motives though, powerful as they may be in general, will always prevail over a fooliſh fondneſs for life, inſtances appear in every war.

CHAP. VII.

One of the captains under CHRYSAL's *master behaves in an extraordinary manner, and vindicates himself as extraordinarily. His crime is over-looked for prudential reasons, which he mistakes, and demands a trial. He meets his deserts.*

AS my master was attending one morning to the success of an attack which he had ordered to be made by some of *the men of war* under his command, upon a fort that principally obstructed the progress of the siege, he was surprized to see one of them not only notoriously make the most shameful delay in *bearing down*, but also the moment she came within reach of it, instead of joining in the attack begun by the others, put about and quit her station, without even attempting to do any thing.

Though the Captain of the ship had drawn the general disesteem of the chore upon him by his arrogant behaviour, and by his morose treatment of his men and officers raised suspicions of his spirit, on this unerring maxim, that *cowardice is the inseparable companion of cruelty*, yet as he had those powerful motives to courage, *pride of family*, and *poverty*, and

must

muſt know that the inevitable conſequence of ſuch a flagrant breach of duty muſt be a diſgraceful death, if it could not be properly accounted for, my maſter concluded that ſome accident muſt have happened, which was the more probable, as the ſhip was the worſt in the fleet, and therefore as ſoon as the affair was over made his ſignal to come on board, that he might learn what was the matter.

Though the firſt ſight of him might have explained the whole, the fears of his heart being viſible in every feature of his haggard face, my maſter diſdained to aggravate his diſtreſs by an appearance of ſeverity, and only aſked him coolly the reaſon of his not having *borne down* to the attack, with the ſame expedition as the other ſhips.

"Sir—Sir—Sir—" (faultered the trembling wretch, not ſufficiently recovered from his fright to expreſs the evaſion he had prepared) "I—I— made all the expedition I "poſſibly could."——

"How can you have the confidence to ſay "ſo," (returned my maſter) "when there "were ſeveral of your ſails, which you never "*ſet?*"

"That was not my fault, Sir;" (replied the Captain, reſuming his natural aſſurance) "How could I ſet them, when I had ſent "the *booms* aſhore yeſterday, by your or-"ders?"——

" The booms!" (interrupted my master with a look of the most contemptuous astonishment) "Can such ignorance be possible? " Surely you must have known, that the " booms meant in my orders, were those the " boats are stowed on, which were to be sent " ashore, that the men might not be hurt by " the splinters in the attack, not those of " your sails!"——

" Very likely, Sir! It might have been so " to be sure. But as the order was to send " all my booms, without any such excep- " tion, I did not think I could justify dis- " obeying them, on my own opinion."—

" And pray, Sir, how can you justify " your quitting your station, in the manner " you did, when you at length made a shift " to come up! was that in obedience to your " orders too?"——

" No, Sir! that was quite another thing. " When I come up, I saw the other ships " had suffered considerably, and as I thought " they were sufficient for the purpose, I " judged it best to save his Majesty's ship " intrusted to my care, for another occasion. " That was my reason, Sir."——

" A very prudential one truely; but I " believe you should add too, to save the " Captain; for if I mistake not greatly, " that was not the least object of your " care."——

" Very

"Very true, Sir! and with good reaſon "too, let me tell you; as I know that the "intereſt of my family which has promoted "me thus far, will not fail to raiſe me higher. "Men of low birth, or whoſe relations will "not ſerve them, may ſet no value on their "lives; but that is not my caſe; I am a-"kin to moſt of the nobility of my country, "who always ſtand by their own blood, "where any preferment, or advantage is to "be gotten! Hem! ahem!"——

"I know their intereſt full well," (retorted my maſter, ſcarce able to ſuppreſs his indignation at ſuch inſolence) "and the cloſe-"neſs with which they hang together; but "take care that you do not depend upon "them too far."

Unabaſhed by the manner, in which this was ſaid, the Captain aſked if he had any farther commands, and being anſwered in the negative, marched off in triumph.

There are ſome crimes, in the puniſhment of which all men are more than ordinarily ſevere, in order to prove their own exemption from them. One of the firſt of theſe is cowardice, which though often an involuntary defect of conſtitution, is juſtly reckoned a crime in military men, from the conſequences that may attend it, and as it makes them unable to perform the duties of a profeſſion, which they ſhould not have entered into, under a ſenſe of ſuch an incapacity.

All

All the Captains preſent were for puniſhing the offender inſtantly, in the moſt exemplary manner, for ſo flagrant a breach of duty. But my maſter, much as he deteſted the crime, and was provoked at the inſolence, with which he ſtrove to carry it off, thought it better to over-look it for the preſent, than by bringing him to juſtice, throw a diſgrace upon the forces, that might encourage the enemy to exert themſelves, in hopes of more inſtances of the kind.

But this moderation was diſappointed by a common cauſe. In a few days after, the Captain judging by himſelf, that nothing but fear of giving offence to his great family, could have prevented his being fallen upon directly (for notwithſtanding his evaſions he was conſcious of his crime) inſtead of improving that precious reſpite to extenuate his guilt, by ſome meritorious action, preſumed, upon meeting ſome inſtances of contempt from the reſt of his chore, to demand the juſtification of a publick trial, in order to be formally acquitted, of what he thought they dared not convict him; and alſo to eſcape being involved in any farther dangers, during the expedition, as he knew the immediate conſequence of ſuch a demand muſt neceſſarily be ſuſpending him from his command, till he ſhould be tried, which he knew could not be, before the concluſion of the

the ſiege; and in this latter particular, his expectation was not deceived.

This directly put an end to the prudential reaſons, that had hitherto ſaved him, and of which the ſucceſsful progreſs of the ſiege had alſo greatly leſſened the force. Accordingly, to end his ſtory here, in a few words, the trial he deſired was granted, the reſult of which was, that he was *broke* with infamy, in contempt of all his boaſts, and menaces, of the power and reſentment of his family and friends.

CHAP. VIII.

CHRYSAL *accounts for the peculiar animoſities, which ſome nations ſhew in war. A noble* SPANIARD *is taken priſoner in a ſally. He makes a propoſal to the general which is accepted, and opens a proſpect of peace. A brutal outrage diſappoints his deſign, and embroils matters more than ever.*

THERE is nothing ſuggeſts ſo diſadvantageous an idea of mankind, as the more than brutal ferocity, with which they deſtroy each other, when quarrels between nations ſet the animoſity of individuals free from thoſe reſtraints of law, with which neceſſity has taught human prudence to enforce the

the obſervation of the general duties of ſocial and moral life.

This animoſity though is never ſeen in its moſt ſanguine colours, but in wars between people of different modes of religion. In that revelation of the will of heaven, which ſhould be the rule of the religion of *Chriſtians*, the firſt precept in reſpect to the mutual intercourſe between man and man, is brotherly love to each other.

Such a precept bears intrinſick evidence of its divine origin. But ſtill human perverſion has dared to repreſent the breach of it as a duty of that revealed law, by confining the benefit of the obligation to the profeſſion of ſome particular opinions, and not only excluding the reſt of mankind from the circle of general brotherhood, but alſo making it a merit to propagate thoſe opinions, by the extirpation of all diſſenting from them, who are held incapable of the favour of heaven, and therefore not entitled to the common rights of humanity.

Of all the people, who profeſs *Chriſtianity*, the *Spaniards* are the moſt bigoted ſlaves to this narrow, and groſs prejudice. With them, therefore, the natural animoſity of war is heightened by religious abhorrence, againſt all who differ in opinion from them; and the laws, which more enlightened nations have mutually agreed in, to reſtrain its ravages, and facilitate the reſtitution of peace, are often broken.

broken through with a cruelty, diſgraceful to the name of man.

In a ſally made one night by the beſieged, a noble *Spaniard*, who had penetrated ſo far into the trenches, that it was impoſſible for him to get back, fell wounded into the hands of the *Engliſh*. The gallantry with which he had defended himſelf gained him reſpect from his enemies; and he was treated with that generous tenderneſs which brave men feel for each other.

Struck with a behaviour ſo different from what he expected, for he had been taught to look upon the *Engliſh* as enemies to mankind, and delighting in the moſt ſavage cruelty, he deſired to be led to the Commander, to whom he ſaid he had ſomething of conſequence to propoſe. Accordingly, as ſoon as his wounds were dreſſed, he was conducted to the General, with whom my maſter happened to be, and advancing to him with an air of dignity, "I am come, illuſtrious "Chief," (ſaid he) "to thank you for the "humane and generous treatment I have "received from your brave ſoldiers, which "if known to my countrymen, would facili-"tate an accommodation between them and "you, as dread of your power, raiſed, I am "now convinced, by injurious miſrepreſen-"tations, has hitherto principally prevented "their liſtening to any terms from you. I "ſpeak not this from ignorance. My fa-

"ther

" ther is governour of the city. If you " will let him know that I am your captive, " he will directly pay for me, whatever ran- " ſom you deſire, and on my return I will " faithfully remove the prejudices, which " keep up their animoſity againſt you, and " by that means open the way to a reconci- " liation, till the pleaſure of our Sovereigns " ſhall reſtore peace to their ſubjects."

Such an offer required no arguments to enforce it. " The *Engliſh*" (anſwered the General) " never abuſe the advantages they " obtain in war. I deſire no ranſom for " your liberty. You are free to return to " your father, when you pleaſe; and if you " can be the means of preventing the effu- " ſion of more blood, as you muſt be con- " vinced that reſiſtance is in vain, I ſhall " think myſelf happy in having an oppor- " tunity to ſhew reſpect to all, whom you " ſhall recommend as your friends, and de- " ſerving of it."

Theſe words filled the benevolent heart of the *Spaniard* with joy. " I fly," (replied he, eagerly) " to execute a commiſſion, in which " there can be no difficulty. As you are " brave, and faithful to your Sovereign, you " will require no terms which brave men and " good ſubjects ought not to comply with."

The General then prevailed upon him to take ſome refreſhment, after which he and my maſter went with him to the head of the lines,

lines, where he diſmiſſed him with every mark of reſpect, attended by an Officer with *a flag of truce*, to bring back the Governour's anſwer.

But this pleaſing proſpect was ſoon overcaſt. The Officer and he had not advanced above half the way, between the trenches, and the town, when they were fired upon by a party of *Spaniards*, who lay in ambuſh among the ruins of ſome old buildings. At the firſt ſound of their fire, the *Spaniard* ruſhed forward in order to put a ſtop to it, and the Officer waved his flag of truce over his head, but that ſacred enſign afforded him no protection. They repeated their ſhot, and ſeeing him fall, ran up, and in deſpite of all the *Spaniard* could do, who received a mortal wound as he covered his body with his own, butchered him in the moſt barbarous manner, replying to his appeal to the law of nations, violated thus in him, that *Hereticks were excluded from the benefit of all laws.*

The indignation, with which ſuch an outrage fired the *Engliſh* forces, is not to be deſcribed. They vowed to exterminate a people, who were unworthy to live; and in the firſt madneſs of their rage were with difficulty reſtrained from attempting to *ſtorm* the walls, before a breach ſhould give them even a poſſibility of ſucceſs.

The leaders did not fail to improve ſuch a ſpirit. Every thing was puſhed on with redoubled

redoubled vigour; and war became more horrible, when blackend with a paſſion for revenge, which had taken ſuch poſſeſſion of the men, that it was ſome time before all the endeavours of their Officers could put a ſtop to their indulging it, and bring them back to that generous valour, which is their peculiar glory.

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's attention is agreeably diverted by the appearance of a young SPANIARD, *who throws himſelf at the feet of his maſter to prefer an extracrdinary requeſt. The Hiſtory of* DON ALPHONSO GUZMAN, *the young* SPANIARD.

I WAS relieved from the pain of attending to ſuch ſcenes of horrour, by an affair that ſhewed in a ſtriking light the force of paſſions more natural to the heart of man.

As my maſter, who, active as light, was every where, and joined in every thing, was ſtanding one night to ſee the effect of a battery, that commanded a particular quarter of the town, a youth, who had made his eſcape from the garriſon, and advanced in the face of all their fire, though ſufficient to terrify any being capable of terrour, threw himſelf at his feet in agonies of diſtreſs.

My

My maſter, whoſe heart was warmed with that generous compaſſion, which is inſeparable from true courage, was ſtruck at the ſight, and raiſing him from the ground, bade him declare the nature of his diſtreſs, and expect every aſſiſtance to which he was entitled by the ſacred duties of humanity.

Encouraged by theſe words the youth raiſed his head, and fixing his eyes upon my maſter with a look inexpreſſibly ſupplicating, "O ſtop your fire, gracious Chief!" (ſaid he preſſing his lips paſſionately to the hand that had raiſed him, and on which he ſtill hung) "ſtop your fire in that fatal direc- "tion, where it can hurt only innocence and "virtue. That building, againſt which it "is levelled, is not a part of the fortifica- "tions, the deſtruction of which can be of "any ſervice to you. It is a convent dedi- "cated to the *Virgin Mother of God*, and "at this time contains all that my ſoul holds "dear, all that is beautiful and virtuous un- "der heaven."

Though his youth, beauty, and diſtreſs intereſted every one preſent in the ſuppliant's favour, the nature of his ſuit muſt neceſſarily have prevented its ſucceſs. But an accident ſaved him from the pain of being refuſed, the powder which was to ſerve the guns ſomehow catching fire, and deſtroying the greateſt part of the battery, in the very inſtant he ſpoke.

Not

Not all the horrours of ſuch a ſcene could ſuppreſs the joy he felt at an event ſo favourable to his hopes. "Heaven has interfered!" (exclaimed he, in an extaſy) "Heaven has "interfered to ſave her; and man will not "preſume to oppoſe its pleaſure."

The enthuſiaſtick manner in which he ſaid this, ſtruck my maſter. "Reſtrain your "paſſions for a few moments," (ſaid he) "till I have leiſure to attend more particu-"larly to you; and then if you can con-"vince me of the truth of what you ſay, "your requeſt ſhall be complied with. Far "be it from me to hurt thoſe helpleſs vo-"taries of religion. *Britons* ſeek other ob-"jects of their valour."—He then gave the neceſſary orders for repairing the battery, and deſiring the youth to follow him, went on board his ſhip, where he treated him with every mark of politeneſs and compaſſion.

As ſoon as they had taken ſome refreſhment, my maſter made a ſign to every one elſe to retire, and then addreſſing himſelf to the youth in the moſt humane manner, deſired to know who he was, and what motives could have induced him to run into ſuch imminent danger in order to prefer a ſuit, of the ſucceſs of which there was ſo little probability.

The youth for ſome moments hung down his head abaſhed, then with a ſigh that ſeemed to burſt his heart, "It is my duty, "moſt

" moſt generous Chief," (ſaid he) " to give " you the information you require, how- " ever painful the taſk may be to me; eſ- " pecially as your condeſcending to liſten " to the ſtory of my misfortunes awakes an " hope, that you will be moved by them to " grant a requeſt on which depends my " life.

" My name is *Alphonſo*. My father, *Don* " *Pedro*, bears an honourable command in " the forces which defend yonder city againſt " your arms, but glories more in the ho- " nour of being deſcended from the noble " family of *Guzman*, which has preſerved its " blood pure from every debaſing mixture, " ſince the beginning of time in the moun- " tains of *Caſtile*, and produced a race of " heroes, whoſe fame has filled the world.

" When my father arrived at an age fit " to bear arms, as none of the powers of " *Europe* dared to provoke the wrath of " *Spain*, diſdaining a life of inglorious peace, " he entered into the forces ſent hither to " reduce ſuch of the rebellious natives, as " ſtill preſumed to refuſe ſubmiſſion to the " monarch of the *Spaniſh* worlds, where he " ſignalized himſelf ſo eminently, that at " the end of ſeven years his merits were re- " warded with a commiſſion, ſigned by the " Viceroy himſelf in the name of the King.

" Such a diſtinguiſhed honour gave weight " to the addreſſes which he had for ſome time

" paid

" paid to the only daughter of *Don Alonzo*
" *Garcias*, who was a native of *Arragon*,
" and had been ſent over by the King to
" fill the important office of Secretary to
" the Receiver of his revenues.

" From this marriage, ſo honourable to
" both parties, I have the happineſs to de-
" rive my birth, if it can be called an happi-
" neſs to be born only to misfortunes.

" As I was the ſole hope of two ſuch
" illuſtrious houſes, no pains were ſpared to
" give me an education ſuitable to my
" birth; the great exploits of my anceſ-
" tors, the antiquity, and untainted nobi-
" lity of my blood, were continually re-
" peated to me to excite emulation, and in-
" ſpire me with proper ſentiments of honour.
" Such care ſeemed the ſureſt means to pro-
" cure happineſs, but the wiſdom of man
" ſtrives in vain againſt the decrees of fate.

" In the neighbourhood of my father's
" houſe, there lived a merchant named *Don*
" *Antonio*, between whoſe family and ours
" there was the cloſeſt intimacy; an inti-
" macy mutually advantageous, the counte-
" nance of a perſon of my father's conſe-
" quence being an honour to his friend, who
" never omitted thoſe returns of gratitude,
" which his wealth often gave him an op-
" portunity of making.

" *Don Antonio* had an only daughter, whoſe
" being heireſs to his great fortune was the
" leaſt

" leaſt bleſſing Heaven had beſtowed upon " her! O! my *Olivia*, ſhall I ever behold " you more? May I yet raiſe my hopes ſo " high as think of calling you mine?—

At theſe words a flood of tears choaking his utterance, my maſter took the opportunity to go out, and give ſome orders to his officers; and on his return, the youth proceeded.

" *Don Antonio*'s daughter and I being " nearly of the ſame age, the tender con- " nection of infant fondneſs grew up be- " tween us, and improved with our ripening " years. The attention of my father was " too much engroſſed by his military cares " to take notice of our attachment, and my " mother was ſo ſenſible of the many per- " fections of *Olivia*, that far from diſcour- " aging, ſhe promoted it by every means in " her power, dwelling continually on her " praiſes, and ſuggeſting to me ſuch little " offices of affection and reſpect as were " ſuited to our ages, and moſt likely to " make an impreſſion on her tender heart.

" Nor did the father of *Olivia* (ſhe had " loſt her mother in her infancy) ſhew any " diſſatisfaction at a paſſion which could not " eſcape his notice; influenced moſt pro- " bably by a ſenſe of the honour which he " ſhould derive from ſuch an alliance.

" In this happy ſtate we lived till I enter- " ed on my fifteenth year, when my father

" thought it proper for me to learn the art " of war, in order to qualify me for ſuch " military promotions as I was entitled to " by my birth, and for that purpoſe gave " me notice to prepare myſelf to march " with ſome troops, which were going to " reinforce a garriſon, in the moſt diſtant " part of the kingdom.

" Though my heart glow'd with all the " ambition and deſire of glory, which my " noble blood muſt naturally inſpire, the " thought of being ſeparated from *Olivia* " overballanced every other conſideration. " In the firſt emotions of my ſoul there- " fore I threw myſelf at my father's feet, " and raſhly own'd my paſſion, imploring " him as he regarded my life to make me " happy in the poſſeſſion of my love, be- " fore he attempted parting us, even for a " moment.

" It is impoſſible to deſcribe his rage on " this unhappy diſcovery. Spurning me " from him with his foot, " Degenerate " wretch! (ſaid he, when his wrath permit- " ted him to ſpeak) " Degenerate wretch, " to ſtain the honour of your blood by think- " ing of an alliance with the daughter of a " perſon, of whoſe family you have no know- " ledge!" —(For in all the intercourſe of " intimacy, the father of *Olivia* had never " diſcovered in what part of *Spain* he had " been born; nor could the recital of illuſ-

" trious

" trious pedigrees, the conſtant topick of diſ-
" courſe among the noble, ever incite him to
" an emulative mention of his own.)——
" Hence! Fly my ſight this moment; nor
" ever preſume to appear before me again,
" till you have conquered this diſgraceful
" paſſion."

" I knew the inflexibility of my father's
" temper too well to attempt making any
" reply, even would the fullneſs of my heart
" have permitted me. I retired therefore
" without ſpeaking a word, and going to
" my mother, informed her of my diſtreſs,
" which ſhe ſtrove to alleviate by every ex-
" preſſion of tenderneſs and conſolation,
" promiſing to exert all her influence, as
" ſoon as the firſt heat of his wrath ſhould
" be allayed, to prevail upon him to con-
" ſent to my ſuit.

CHAP. X.

Continued. OLIVIA*'s father is taken up by the inquiſition, and herſelf put into a convent, on an* ENGLISH *battery's firing, upon which,* DON ALPHONSO *comes in deſpair to* CHRYSAL*'s maſter to make a very odd requeſt, which he grants at length, and alſo promiſes him his aſſiſtance to obtain his miſtreſs.*

" THOUGH I received ſome encour-
" agement from theſe aſſurances, I could
" not forbear going in the boding of my
" heart, to acquaint *Olivia* with what had
" happened, but in the moſt delicate terms.
" Her affliction was not leſs than mine.
" She ſaw the ſincerity of my love, and in
" the tenderneſs of ſuch a ſcene yielded to
" my entreaties, and plighted her faith to
" me by the moſt ſacred vows.

" Comforted by the thought that ſhe could
" not now be torn from me, I returned
" home, where I found my mother fulfilling
" her promiſe, and pleading with my fa-
" ther in my behalf. As their earneſtneſs
" made them ſpeak aloud, I could not reſiſt
" the natural deſire of liſtening to a debate
" of ſuch importance to my hopes. She
" urged with all the ſtrength of reaſon, the
" abſurdity

" abſurdity of thinking a family diſhonour-
" ed by the admiſſion of a female, and en-
" forced her arguments with the examples
" even of Sovereigns; ſhe inſiſted on the
" beauty, virtues, and fortune of *Olivia*, which
" made her worthy of the moſt honour-
" able alliance; and concluded with ſaying
" how much better it would be for us all to
" have me married to a perſon, whoſe wealth
" would enable us to ſpend the remainder of
" our lives in plenty and happineſs, than
" to continue ſtruggling with every miſery
" of poverty, meerly to indulge a falſe ill-
" grounded pride.

" My father had liſtened to the former part
" of what ſhe ſaid with an appearance of at-
" tention, but the moment ſhe mentioned
" his poverty, he loſt all patience. " For-
" bear, mean, mercenary woman!" (ſaid he ſtamping his foot upon the ground with a violence that ſhook the houſe) " Forbear to
" tempt my wrath by ſuch baſe inſinuations.
" Did ever a *Caſtilian* think poverty an
" hardſhip, or put riches in competition with
" his honour? Such ſentiments may ſuit an
" *Arragonian*, but are beneath me. I ſee
" the ſource of the wretch's degeneracy!
" My blood never could have ſtooped to
" ſuch meanneſs, had it not been mixed with
" yours."——

" Saying this, he flung out of the room, and
" finding me at the door, " Mark me, thou

" diſgrace to my blood!" (ſaid he with a look, that appalled my ſoul) " If ever I " hear more of this affair, I ſwear by the " offended honour of all my anceſtors, to ſa- " crifice every one concerned in my being " offered ſuch an affront.

" What I felt at hearing this dreadful de- " nunciation may be eaſily conceived. I " ſwooned away, nor recovered my ſenſes, " till ſeveral hours after, when I found my " mother weeping over me, in the bitterneſs " of reſentment and grief.

" As ſoon as ſhe perceived that I was " come to myſelf, ſhe ſtrove to comfort " me, by repeating her former promiſes, to " the accompliſhment of which ſhe was now " farther impelled by her reſentment of the " reflections, which my father had thrown " upon her country.

" But an unforeſeen misfortune blaſted all " our hopes before ſhe had time to make " another effort.

" The father of *Olivia* having had occa- " ſion to go to *England*, on ſome affairs in " the courſe of his extenſive dealings, was " ſo taken with the people of that country, " that after his return, he never omitted any " opportunity of vindicating them from the " injurious aſperſions of thoſe who ſpoke " only from prejudice, and without proper " information.

" This

"This attachment naturally raiſed the "jealouſy of the clergy; but as he confined "his approbation meerly to their moral and "ſocial virtues, without ever ſaying a word "in vindication of their religious tenets, "they contented themſelves with cautioning "him againſt miſplacing his praiſe, and "telling him, that *there could be no virtue* "*where the true faith was not; and therefore* "*thoſe actions, with which he was dazzled,* "*were no more than ſhining ſins:* And they "were thus mild in their reprehenſion, as "he was remarkably punctual in the pro-"feſſion and practice of all the rites and "doctrines preſcribed by the holy church.

"But this lenity laſted not long. On "the breaking out of the preſent war with "*England*, ſome perſons who envied the ſuc-"ceſs with which his honeſt induſtry had "been rewarded, raiſed a ſuſpicion in the "Governour of his holding an improper "correſpondence with the enemy, to which "his former regard for them ſeemed to give "an appearance of probability.

"Bold in conſcious innocence he denied "the charge, nor could the ſtricteſt enquiry "procure the leaſt proof of it: But in the "courſe of their ſearch a diſcovery was un-"happily made, that involved him in ruin, "if poſſible, more dreadful; a number of "books containing opinions contrary to "the Catholick Faith being found in his

" poſſeſſion concealed among ſome of his " goods.

" In vain did he alledge that they belong- " ed not to, nor could poſſibly have been " know of by him, the goods among which " they had been concealed having been land- " ed but a few days before out of an *Engliſh* " ſhip, which had been taken by a *Spaniſh* " man of war in her paſſage to one of their " own colonies, where ſuch books were open- " ly allowed of, and ſold to him unopen- " ed, as they ſtill remained.

" But evident as the truth of this was, " *the Holy Office*, to whoſe juriſdiction the " affair belonged, would not admit of any " ſuch excuſe. They inſtantly ſeized the " unhappy man, and hurrying him away to " their own priſon, took poſſeſſion of all " his wealth, and forced his helpleſs daugh- " ter into yonder convent.

" This misfortune which deprived me of " the wretch's pooreſt conſolation, the li- " berty of complaining, drove me to de- " ſpair. I pined in ſilence; and was begin- " ning to meditate on laying down a life, " that was become a burden to me, when " my father calling me to him one morn- " ing, " The time is come!" (ſaid he ſmil- ing fiercely) " that will prove the blood of " *Guzman*. The evil genius of the *Engliſh* " has prompted them to come, and ſeek their " deaths here. The moſt noble Governour

" has

" has not only promoted me this day to the " command of a company in the forces deſ- " tined for the defence of this city, but " alſo in reſpect to my family, has appoint- " ed you to be my lieutenant. Let this " arouze you to a ſenſe of yourſelf! Conſider " what you owe to your country, and to " your name! Every feebler paſſion flies " at the manly voice of war."

" Languid as my ſoul was, I could not " hear this news, without joy, eſpecially as " it opened me a proſpect of meeting ho- " nourably that death, which was now my " only hope. Accordingly, as ſoon as the " enemy appeared, I courted danger with " ſuch eagerneſs, that my father in ſpite of " all his maganimity more than once deſir- " ed me to reſtrain a courage, that aroſe to " an exceſs.

" But even death itſelf is deaf to the " wretch's call. Nothing material happen- " ed to me, till the battery, to which I came " to you, opened upon the convent, when the " thought of my *Olivia*'s danger of being bu- " ried in its ruins drove me to madneſs. I " inſtantly flew thither, and imagining that " ſuch circumſtances bore down all regard " to rules calculated for times of peace, " demanded entrance to convey the in- " habitants to ſome place of ſafety: But " what was my aſtoniſhment to hear, the " Governour had given the ſtricteſt orders,

" that not a ſoul ſhould be admitted to ſtir, " committing to the immediate hand of " Heaven the protection of its peculiar vo- " taries.

" Such inhumanity, for I can call it by " no milder name, broke every bond of " duty and allegiance. I abjured all far- " ther connection with ſo cruelly inſenſible " a monſter; and recollecting the many ex- " alted inſtances of true generoſity which " the unhappy father of *Olivia* had told me " of the *Engliſh*, I reſolved to apply my- " ſelf to them, and try whether I could not " obtain that ſafety for the beloved of my " ſoul, which I could not hope from him, " whoſe duty it was to protect her.

" This, moſt illuſtrious Chief, is the ſtory " of my misfortunes; the cauſe of that con- " duct which appeared ſo ſtrange to you. " If you grant my ſuit, you will be amply " rewarded by the conſcious approbation of " your own mind. You will merit the " bleſſing of Heaven on your undertak- " ings, by ſparing the moſt perfect of its " works! And may I preſume to add! You " will attach to you an heart that is incap- " able of deceit! Through every viciſſitude " of life will I attend your ſteps, the faith- " ful ſervant of your fate."

The brightneſs of truth breaks through every cloud, and forces conviction. " I " grant your requeſt;" (ſaid my maſter with a ſmile of conſolation and encouragement) " The

"The convent ſhall be ſpared. Nor is that "all. If ſucceſs crowns my hopes, I will "alſo uſe every means in my power to re- "ſtore your *Olivia* to your arms."

CHAP. XI.

The fortunate effect of CHRYSAL'*s maſter's ſparing the convent. The mutual advantages to victors and vanquiſhed of articles of capitulation.* CHRYSAL'*s maſter performs his promiſe to* ALPHONSO, *into whoſe ſervice* CHRYSAL *enters.* ALPHONSO *recovers his miſtreſs, whoſe father is ſet at liberty by a piece of* FUN *of ſome* ENGLISH *ſailors. Concluſion of the ſtory of* ALPHONSO. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

ACCORDING to his promiſe, the next night when the battery was repaired, my maſter gave orders to direct the fire another way, where he ſoon found the reward of his generoſity, one of the firſt bombs which was thrown ſetting fire to the principal magazine in the whole city, the blowing up of which overturned a conſiderable part of the fortifications.

Animated by this ſucceſs to a degree of phrenſy, the beſiegers puſhed on their attacks, with ſuch irreſiſtible fury, that *in ſpite of the accumulated havock of war, diſeaſe, and want,* they at length overcame the obſtinacy of the

beſieged, and compelled them to capitulate; terms which were readily agreed to on both ſides, *as they ſaved the plunder from the ſoldiers, for the victorious Commanders*; at the ſame time, that they protected the perſons of the vanquiſhed from licentious outrage.

There is no inſtance, in which the cuſtoms of mankind are more changed, than this. Formerly, when nations waged war, every thing the victorious ſoldier could lay hold on was his own, the perſons as well as the property of the vanquiſhed; and this more eſpecially at the taking of a town, which was the harveſt of his hopes. The exceſſes committed on theſe occaſions moſt certainly required a remedy; but it were well if that remedy, as in other caſes, had not been abuſed; and the care of reſtraining the exceſs of the common ſoldiers made a pretext for depriving them of the reward of all their toils and dangers, to enrich their Commanders.

The injuſtice of making ſlaves of the people, for the ambition or avarice of their Prince is ſo flagrant, that the practice has been univerſally diſcontinued among civilized nations, who alſo affect to ſhew moderation in ſtripping them of their property, particularly in this inſtance of towns, taken by capitulation. But at whoſe expence is this moderation? Why at that of the inferiour Officers, and Soldiers, who receive a pittance of their own earnings, that only inſults their neceſſities, while the bulk is ſhared between

their

their Superiours. The injuſtice of this is evident. Either all ſuch *compoſition* ſhould be aboliſhed entirely, and the properties, as well as liberty of the vanquiſhed be preſerved to them, or the price be more equitably divided with thoſe, from whom the plunder is taken, who ſtruggle with diſtreſs, and brave death for a morſel of bread without any more hope of mending their condition even by ſucceſs, than the ox has of eating the corn, for which he labours to plow the ground: and this loſs of hope is the reaſon, why ſoldiers are not animated with the ſame ardour now as in former days.

But grating as ſo flagrant a partiality muſt be to a generous mind, there is one circumſtance, not obvious perhaps to you, that aggravates the pain of it ſtill higher: This is the neceſſity, which the ſufferers are under of ſubmitting to *the inſolence and extortions of a ſet of Clerks, and Agents*, who fatten on their ſpoils, without even pretending to any merit in the acquiſition: a reflection, that exaſperates them againſt their Commanders, by whoſe favour thoſe wretches are introduced, and ſupported, and on whom they father all their villainies.

Much as the cares of his ſituation engroſſed the attention of my maſter, he did not forget his promiſe to the *Spaniſh* youth, but ordering him a guard of ſoldiers, bade him go, as ſoon as the gates ſhould be delivered up, and ſecure the convent where his *Olivia* was

was confined, from any accident which might happen on such an occasion in spight of all their care, giving him at the same time a purse of gold, *in which I was*, to answer any present necessities, with directions to apply to him again, if he should have any farther need of his assistance.

My new master did not want to have such a commission repeated. He kissed the hand of his benefactor in a rapture of gratitude, and encouraging the guard assigned him with the most liberal promises, flew, the moment the gates of the city were open'd, to the convent, and demanded his *Olivia* with the peremptory voice of a conquerour, where the sight of the guard removed every objection, and she was instantly delivered to him.

The meeting of these young lovers was most affecting. They flew into each other's arms, and embracing in extasy too big for utterance, gave vent to the fullness of their hearts by a flood of tears.

Recovering himself at length, "Come, my "*Olivia*," (said *Alphonso*, taking her hand) "let us leave this place. Let us go"—

"O whither" (interrupted she, starting wildly) "Whither shall I go? I have no "home;—no father to receive me."—

"My home is yours;" (answered *Alphonso*, embracing her most tenderly) "We will go "to the house of my father, who cannot "persist in his cruelty, when he is informed "how signally heaven has interfered in our "favour,

" favour, and there we will conſult on the " means proper for procuring the deliver- " ance of *Antonio*. I have a protector among " the conquerours, the moſt generous of " mankind, who will not refuſe his aſſiſ- " tance on ſuch an occaſion."

Theſe words comforted *Olivia* with an hope, for the accompliſhment of which though ſhe was indebted to another cauſe.

The way from the convent to the houſe of *Alphonſo*'s father leading them by the priſon of the Inquiſition, *Olivia* was ſo affected at the ſight of it, that ſhe ſwooned away in the arms of *Alphonſo*. Such an accident naturally threw the whole company into an embarraſſment, while they were in the midſt of which, a body of *Engliſh* ſeamen, who had ſlipped away from their officers, and were roving about meerly from curioſity, and without intention of doing miſchief, but ready to join in any that ſhould fall in their way, happening to come by, no ſooner underſtood from the guard what was the matter, than looking at each other for ſome moments as if waiting for the word of command, at length one of them cried out, " Hallo, boys! " What ſay you? Shall we bail the gen- " tlewoman's father? May-hap there may " be ſome of our countrymen in the bilboes " along with him! Damn my eyes and limbs, " but it would be good *fun*, to ſet them all " free! I fancy the Inquiſitors will not re-

" fuſe

" fuſe our bail; if they do, I ſhould be " glad to pick a quarrel with them: I hate " them mortally ever ſince I ſaw them roaſt " ſome poor *Smouches* at *Liſbon*, becauſe " they would not eat pork. Come! cheat " away my hearts of oak! All hands aloft, " and to work."

Theſe words were like fire given to a mine. He had ſcarce finiſhed, when the thoughtleſs creatures without more ado ran to the priſon, and while ſome of them were forcing in the gates, the reſt mounting on each other's ſhoulders climbed over the walls.

The moment *Olivia*, now recovered from her ſwoon, ſaw the priſon open, " Now is " the time, *Alphonſo!*" (ſaid ſhe) " Now is " the time to ſet my father free."——

The hint was ſufficient. *Alphonſo* turned directly to the guard, and perceiving by their looks, that they were willing to aſſiſt him, " I go, my love!" (ſaid he) " But where " ſhall I leave you in ſafety till I return? " Such a place cannot be fit for your de- " licacy."——

" Speak not of leaving me!" (interrupted ſhe eagerly) " I will go with you! No " delicacy ſhall interfere with ſuch a duty."—

On her ſaying this, they all entered the priſon, where the ſeamen were ſhouting, and ſkipping about like ſo many wild creatures, and ſetting all the priſoners at liberty, wherever they went.

The

The ſecrets of this priſon-houſe are too horrid for deſcription. I ſhall therefore draw a veil over them at this time, eſpecially as another occaſion will lead me into the ſame ſcenes again, when the repreſentation will be more intereſting.

No words can convey an idea of the tenderneſs of the meeting between *Olivia*, and her father, whom *Alphonſo* and ſhe readily found out. As ſoon as they had indulged the firſt tranſports of their joy, ſhe informed him briefly how much they were both indebted to *Alphonſo*, for their preſent happineſs. Though her father was not at a loſs for the motive of ſuch generoſity, he thought it not proper to take notice of it at that time. He embraced him tenderly, and beſought Heaven to reward his virtue.

"The happineſs of ſerving thoſe moſt "dear to us" (ſaid *Alphonſo*, who had not the ſame command of his temper) "is its "own reward. *Olivia* and her father have "a right to every thing in my power. But "let us leave this place, the ſight of which "appalls my ſoul. Let us go to the houſe "of my father."—

"Lead on, my children!" (anſwered *Olivia*'s father) "I follow willingly; and not "without hope of reconciling my friend to "our general happineſs."

When they went out of the priſon, they found the ſailors employed in executing a

piece

piece of juſtice exactly in their character. They had rambled all through the priſon, without doing or deſigning miſchief, till they came to the chamber in which were kept the inſtruments of torture, the ſight of which incenſed them to ſuch a degree, that they inſtantly reſolved to make the Inquiſitors themſelves feel the force of them in their turn; but they, apprehenſive of what might happen, had prudently made their eſcape by a ſecret paſſage, as ſoon as the priſon had been forced. Diſappointed thus in their deſign, the ſailors took all the horrid apparatus, with the habits, enſigns, books, *&c.* of the office, and piling them up in the court, ſet fire to the heap, concluding the exploit with three cheers for the honour of old *England*; after which they marched off in queſt of more *fun*, as unconcerned as if nothing had happened.

When *Alphonſo* arrived at his father's houſe, he found his mother juſt ſinking under the weight of affliction. On hearing his voice, ſhe ſtarted up, and running to him, "O my "ſon! my ſon!" (exclaimed ſhe, claſping him in her arms, and leaning her head upon his boſom) "Heaven has heard my pray-"ers! I am not childleſs, tho' I am a wi-"dow." "A widow!" (exclaimed *Alphonſo*) "Forbid it, Heaven! O my father!"—

"Yes, *Alphonſo!*" (continued ſhe, raiſing her head from his boſom, which ſhe had be-

dew'd

dew'd with her tears) "Your father died, as "he lived, with honour, fighting valiantly "by the ſide of his General, in defence of "his country. But what do I ſee?" (caſting her eyes upon *Olivia*, her father, and the guard, whom her ſurprize had prevented her taking notice of before) "*Olivia!* "*Antonio!* —— And who are theſe ſtrange "men?—But alas, I know too well!—O! "my ſon, art thou then a priſoner to the "enemies, who ſlew thy father?—Am I to "loſe thee again, the moment thou art re-"turned?"——

"No, my mother!" (anſwered he) "I "am no priſoner! They are our protectors, "given by the moſt generous of men, who "has thus reſtored us to each other! O! "that my father were alive, to make our "happineſs compleat."

"Since Heaven has appointed otherwiſe," (ſaid *Antonio*, going up to *Alphonſo*'s mother, who was weeping with *Olivia*, on whoſe neck ſhe had fallen) "it is our duty to ſub-"mit to its pleaſure. The circumſtances "of our lives make it improper for us to "think of living any longer here. But "that ſhould not diſcourage us. The vir-"tuous find an home every where! We will "remove to the dominions of the *Engliſh*, "where I have lodged in honeſt hands for-"tune ſufficient to make our retreat happy. "Under the protection of their laws, a man's

"mind

" mind is at liberty, and his wealth is se-
" cure. Mine was my only crime here; but
" I was aware of such an attack, and had
" removed it beyond the reach of those, who
" impiously made religion the pretext for
" depriving me of it. Were my friend *Don*
" *Pedro* living, I would have removed the
" objections which his high notions of ho-
" nour made to an alliance with my family,
" and prevailed upon him to accompany
" us."* These words comforted the mother of *Alphonso*, and made the lovers happy.

Every thing being thus settled, the guard was dismissed with professions of the highest gratitude to the generous Chief, which *Antonio* and *Alphonso* proposed waiting on him to pay in person, as soon as he should be more at leisure; and to reward the soldiers for their attendance, *Alphonso* gave them the purse of gold, he had received from his benefactor, and *in which I was*, in the division of which I fell to the lot of the serjeant who commanded them, who looking upon me as an earnest of the vast treasures he was to receive as his share of the spoil, went away with an happy heart, to join his fellows, who were now in full possession of the city.

* *The story of* ANTONIO *followed here, but was so blotted and imperfect in the M. S. that the Editor was obliged to omit it.*

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome ſtriking remarks on a ſtate of abſolute liberty. Diſappointment of the hopes of the conquerours, with the natural conſequences.* CHRYSAL'*s maſter going to take a taſte of the pleaſures of affluence, is flammed out of his treaſure by a ſutler, into whoſe ſervice* CHRYSAL *enters.*

THE conduct of man in ſuch ſcenes as this, where he thinks himſelf at liberty to follow the inſtantaneous impulſe of his own will, without apprehenſion of immediate puniſhment, ſhews the groundleſs vanity of thoſe, who boaſt ſo loudly of the excellency of his nature, and deny the neceſſity of coercive laws.

It is true, no people ever abuſed this liberty leſs than the *Engliſh*, who ſcorn to inflict upon others that oppreſſion from which their laws protect themſelves; as on the other hand, ſlaves, on a change of fortune, always prove the moſt imperious tyrants; but ſtill the circumſtances attending even the moſt moderate exertion of it are too ſhocking for diſpaſſionate deſcription, wherefore I ſhall wave the painful taſk.

As

As ſoon as ſome degree of order was eſtabliſhed in the city, the victorious commanders proceeded to divide the ſpoil, *a work for which they all ſhew'd their capacity in the moſt remarkable manner*, the pittance which they thought proper to appoint for the ſhare of each of the private men, who had literally born the heat and burthen of the day, being a trifle beneath the acceptance of any but a beggar who wanted a morſel of bread, and not *the fifty-thouſandth part* of what the chief commanders, who comparatively had lived in luxury, and iſſued their orders from places of ſafety, modeſtly owned to have reſerved for each of themſelves.

Nor was the caſe of the inferiour officers, who executed thoſe orders, any better, their ſhares not being ſufficient to defray the extraordinary expences which they had been at, to provide for the enterprize, much leſs the extraordinary expences of living, where the indiſpenſible neceſſaries of life were ſubject to the moſt exorbitant impoſitions of an avaricious, and arbitrary will; ſo that all they gained by their conqueſt was to exchange the dangers of war, for the miſeries of want.

This diſappointment of the hopes which alone had ſupported their ſpirits through hardſhips almoſt beyond the power of nature to ſupport, filled up the black liſt of the cala-

calamities, which attended this enterprize, aggravating by deſpair the diſeaſes to which the climate ſubjected the victors to ſuch a degree, that their loſs, after their conqueſt, exceeded many times that which they had ſuffered in the ſiege from ſo many combin'd cauſes.

To the truth of this repreſentation, which to unexperienced ſpeculation may appear too ſeverely drawn, the wretched remains of the conquering army which returned to their exhauſted country, bore a melancholy teſtimony.—But to quit theſe diſagreeable reflections!

Such a treaſure as I was (a greater much than he had ever been poſſeſſed of before!) raiſed the ſpirits of my maſter, the ſerjeant, ſo high, that he went directly to a ſutler's tent to take a taſte of the good living, which he thought himſelf ſecure of, for the remainder of his days.

On his entering the tent, and aſking what entertainment he could have, the ſutler, ignorant of his wealth, anſwered with a curſe, that he had none for ſuch ſhabby fellows as him, and took him by the ſhoulder to thruſt him out. Provoked at ſuch an indignity to a perſon of his preſent conſequence, my maſter turned upon him, and pulling *me* out of his pocket, demanded haughtily, why he might not have what he would pay for, as well as another.

The

The ſight of the gold inſtantly changed the ſutler's whole behaviour. "My worthy "friend!" (ſaid he, ſhaking the ſerjeant by the hand) "I beg your pardon. I actually "did not perceive whom I ſpoke to, I am "ſo hurried about. But come along with "me, and I'll make you amends. I have "a nice leg of a fowl which was beſpoke "for your colonel; but *firſt come firſt ſerv-* "*ed*, as the ſaying is, ſo here it is for you; "and here is a bottle of wine as cool as if "it came but this minute from *Iceland*."

My maſter was not proof againſt ſuch an invitation. He *fell to*, without more ceremony, and when he had finiſhed his feaſt, calling to know what he was to pay, the ſutler anſwered, Two doubloons.

"Two doubloons?—Two devils!" (ſaid the ſerjeant, ſtaring at ſuch a demand) "For "a leg of an old hen, as black as Hell, "and lean as *Beelzebub*; and a bottle of "rot-gut, ſour cyder? No! no! friend! "no ſuch tricks for me. I am not to be "*flammed* ſo neither."

"Why there it is now!" (anſwered the ſutler, not much pleaſed with my maſter's looks) "The moment a man grows rich, he "grows covetous. I received the ſame for "the other leg of that very fowl this mo- "ment from an enſign, who by the ſame "token left his laced waiſtcoat in pawn for "half the money. But I will not fall out

"with

" with you for such a trifle, as I expect more " of your custom; so e'en give me what " you please. You can't think one doub- " loon too much I am sure! But you shall " make it up another time."

Such an argument could not be resisted. The serjeant threw *me* down upon the table with an air of grandeur, and went to consider how he should lay out to the best advantage, the treasures which he expected immediately to receive.

CHAP. XIII.

Character of CHRYSAL's *new master. The right way not to suffer by making mistakes. A curious conversation between* CHRYSAL's *master and two persons of consequence lays open the secrets of some interesting affairs. He makes up a foolish dispute by a sensible toast.*

I WAS now entered into a service, which opened to me so many various views of human folly, vice and wretchedness, as made the prospect painful.

The manner in which my new master got me into his possession, shewed his character in a light sufficiently strong. But I soon had the satisfaction of seeing that with all his address at imposition, he was himself no more

than the tool of the impoſitions of his ſuperiours, who ſcarce left him the pooreſt gleanings to pick up, after all their plenteous harveſt: The juſt and conſtant fate of all ſuch wretches.

The continual hurry in which he was engaged, though he had falſely alledged it as an excuſe for the treatment of my late maſter, the ſerjeant, was really ſufficient to excuſe any inadvertency, or blunder, and muſt have cauſed many in any one, whoſe ideas were not ſettled in one certain courſe, out of which it was impoſſible to divert them. But I ſoon found, that he was in no danger of that kind, all his thoughts having ſuch an invariable biaſs to his own intereſt, that every miſtake naturally fell to that ſide, for which upon detection his hurry was a ready and probable excuſe.

The ſerjeant had ſcarce left him, when two perſons entered, whom he received with every mark of the moſt obſequious ceremony, and reſpect. One of them I directly knew to be my old maſter, the Admiral's clerk, as I ſoon found the other to be in the ſame important ſtation with the General.

My maſter, who was not at a loſs for the occaſion of their viſit, led them into the moſt private place in the tent, and ſetting before them a bottle of *his beſt*, proceeded to buſineſs. "*Mr. Admiral*, to your good health! *Mr. General*, my very hearty ſervice to you!" ſaid

(ſaid he, filling a brimmer, and addreſſing each, by the title of his maſter, as he ſhook them by the hand) "Here is a good concluſion of the campaign to us. I was impatient for your coming to know how I ſhould go on. Here have been ſeveral officers with me already, for credit on the ſcore of their prize-money, for the length of the ſiege, and the dearneſs of every thing has not left them a penny, nor any thing to pawn for one. I have got as many cloaths, and things of all kinds, as would ſerve to ſet up a *Monmouth-ſtreet* merchant. If the place had held out but a few days longer, the poor devils muſt have done duty in *Buff*. Hah! hah! hah!

"And the propereſt dreſs for them:" (returned *the Admiral*) "Who wants any cloaths in ſuch a climate as this? I am ſure I go naked half my time, though I keep under cover, and have nothing to do, to heat me.

"Very true!" (anſwered my maſter) "But naked and hungry both are not quite ſo well; and when their moveables were all gone after their money, I don't know who would have ſupplied them.

"Then let them live on their allowance!" (ſaid the General) "They who can't afford to pay for better, ſhould be content with that.——

" To die upon it, you ſhould ſay;" (interrupted my maſter) " I am ſure the ſtores " laid in are ſuch as no one can live upon, " that has ever known what living was. For " my part, I wonder the contractors were " not aſhamed to ſupply ſuch wretched ſtuff " of all kinds. They muſt have no con- " ſcience at all, who can do ſuch things."—

" Conſcience! hah! hah! hah! who ever " heard a ſutler ſpeak of conſcience be- " fore!" (ſaid the Admiral) " And pray my " conſcientious friend, what do you charge " a bottle for this moſt excellent wine of " yours?——

" For this wine?" (anſwered my maſter, palating it two or three times) " I charge " for this wine only *a piſtole*; and let me " tell you that is not ſo much, conſidering " every thing. This Burgundy coſt me five ſhillings a bottle, prime coſt; and when " you compute every expence, you'll find " that my profit is nothing extraordinary; " nothing at all in compariſon of what others " get.

" No! to be ſure!" (replied the General) " Your conſcience won't ſuffer you to do " as they do! you are too good a man—

" Too good a *Chriſtian*, you ſhould ſay; (interrupted the Admiral) " as appears by your " *baptizing* your wine ſo piouſly! hah! hah! " hah! Pray what did the water coſt, that " is mixed with this ſame Burgundy? I " hope

" hope that did not ſtand you in five ſhil-
" lings a bottle too? Hah! hah! hah!"—

" It is very well, gentlemen!" (returned my maſter with a ſneer) " You are pleaſed " to be merry. But if I had not ſome way " to make out matters, I could never pay " the exorbitant taxes, which are ſqueezed " from me, by ſome people whom I ſhan't " name. And ſo here's my ſervice to you " both once more! When you lower *your* " *compoſition*, I'll leſſen the quantity of wa-" ter, and mend mine. Hah! hah! hah!"—

" And ſo you had need," (ſaid the General) " to make it drinkable: As it is, I wonder " it does not poiſon every one that taſtes it. " When I lived at the *Shakeſpear*, we did " not give worſe than this to our company " after they were dead drunk!

" Worſe than this!" (added the Admiral) " If you had given me half ſo bad, I ſhould " have broken your head with the bottle."

" Broken my head!" (returned the General) " fine words truely! When you were a " blue-noſed journey-man Barber, and uſed " to come to me to beg broken victuals, " and bottoms of bottles, you ſpoke in ano-" ther tone.——

" And when I was, Sir," (replied the Admiral) " I had a good trade, and never " looked upon myſelf as upon a level with " the Pimp of a tavern——

"And yet that pimping made you what "you are now!" (retorted the General riſing up in a paſſion) "You forget perhaps "how you begged of me to introduce your "ſiſter to the Admiral, by which means you "got into his ſervice! This is a fine re-"turn indeed.——

"And you forget too," (ſaid the Admiral ſtarting from his ſeat, and catching at the bottle) "That it was that ſame ſiſter of "mine, who got you into the General's "ſervice, if you go to that, ſo that I think "the obligation is equal.——

"Gentlemen! dear gentlemen!" (interrupted my maſter, clapping an hand to each of their collars) "Conſider what you are do-"ing! What will the world ſay of ſuch a "quarrel between gentlemen, who ought to "agree like brothers. For ſhame! every "body will laugh at you! come! ſit down, "and be good friends, and I'll try if I have not "one bottle of better wine, over which we'll "make up all matters."—Then bringing it, and filling his glaſs, "Come, gentlemen," (continued he, ſhaking each of them by the hand) "I'll give you a toaſt that ſhall drown "all animoſity: Here is proſperity to pimp-"ing! It is the beſt trade going, and has "made us all! Aye, and is practiſed too "by people in every ſtation, however they "may affect to turn up their noſes at it. "So let us attend to our buſineſs, and not

"fall

" *fall* together by the ears for nothing, like " a parcel of dogs about a bare bone. It " ſignifies nothing what we have been; if " we mind our *bits* now, we ſhall all be gen- " tlemen as good as the beſt of them; and " as well reſpected too."

The Admiral and General ſaw the force of what he ſaid, and pledging his toaſt, ſhook hands and were as good friends as ever.

CHAP. XIV.

Continued. The myſteries of agency; and convenience of a military government, with ſome curious notions of the genteeleſt ways of riſing in life.

" WELL, gentlemen," (ſaid my maſter, who was not pleaſed at their jeſts upon his liquour, becauſe he could not deny the truth of them) " I hope that wine " pleaſes you!

" Aye!" (anſwered the Admiral) " this " is *the right ſort!* this is *the thing*. Give " us this; and keep the other for officers, " and ſuch as are not uſed to better.——

" And if it poiſons them" (added the Admiral) " the publick will have the fewer " to pay. Now they have done the buſi-

" neſs, let them live, or die as they can, we " care not. That's nothing to us.

" Very true!" (ſaid my maſter) " All " we have to do is to make the moſt of " them, while they do live; and therefore I " ſhould be glad to know, as I ſaid before, " how far I may venture to go with them, " on the credit of their prize-money; for " as the place was ſaved from being plun- " dered by the articles of capitulation, they " muſt all get money on their ſhares, whe- " ther they will or not; their neceſſities " are ſuch."

" So much the better for us, who can " buy their ſhares: (anſwered the Admiral) " They'll give the better bargains. Their " neceſſity is our gain." ——

" Aye!" (replied my maſter) " But I " don't find they intend ſelling. All they " propoſe is to mortgage."——

" Then let them ſee who'll give them mo- " ney:" (ſaid the General) " No! no! no " mortgages for us. An abſolute ſale, or " nothing. We'll have no after reckonings; " no *over-baling* accounts. As to their be- " ing unwilling to ſell, we'll manage that " matter with them. When you have got " them ſufficiently in your books, call for " your money, and as it will be impoſſible " for them to pay, apply to the commander " in chief, who will oblige them to do you " juſtice."

" Why!

"Why! to be ſure, that muſt do!" (anſwered my maſter) "But how far am I to "truſt them?——

"This will ſhew you!" (replied the General) "Here is the rate of all their ſhares. "Look at the ſum total. What noble for-"tunes that would have made for half a "dozen reaſonable men. It went to my "heart to *fritter* it away among ſo many."—

"This! this the rate of their ſhares!", (ſaid my maſter, not able to conceal his aſtoniſhment, when he looked at the paper, which the other gave him) "Is it poſſible "that this ſhould be all?"——

"Yes!" (returned the Admiral) "and "too much for them too. More than moſt "of them ever had before, or will make "a good uſe of now.——

"Why, they'll mutiny, and cut all our "throats!" (returned my maſter) "There "are ſeveral of them who owe me almoſt as "much as this already. I thought they "would have had ten times this ſum at leaſt. "They'll certainly mutiny, and cut all our "throats.

"Don't you give yourſelf any trouble "about their mutining!" (ſaid the General) "Do you mind your buſineſs, and leave us "to take care of that. Their ſpirits will hard-"ly be ſo high! If you have gone hand over "head, and truſted them ſo far, you muſt

" abide by the loſs. I thought I gave you a " friendly caution about that before.

" And ſo," (returned my maſter) " I am " not to go beyond this rate, you ſay?"—

" Not a penny!" (anſwered the Admiral) " That is your rule. Whatever you can " beat them down of that ſhall be your " own."

" That is deducting five *per Cent.* A- " gency!" (interpoſed the General) " and " five, or ten *per Cent.* as you can make your " bargain, for prompt-payment, for we will " not appear to have any hand in the affair, " farther than paying you the money. It " muſt not be known that we are concerned " in the leaſt.——

" You concerned!" (replied my maſter) " I don't underſtand you. Are you to be " concerned with me, in what I buy?

" Not in the leaſt" (return'd the Admiral) " any farther than by employing you " to act for us. You ſeem to miſtake the " matter entirely. You are to buy the ſhares " for us, according to this rate, for which " we will allow you a proper agency: And " that is all the concern you are to have in " the affair.——

" But I ſuppoſe," (ſaid my maſter) " I " may buy on my own account if I pleaſe!"—

" Buy on your own account!" (interrupted the General) " Such another word, and " you ſhall neither ſell nor buy any thing " here.

"here. Are not we the Commander's "agents: And do you think they will ſuf- "fer us to be interloped upon? You may "be very well content with the profits of "your own buſineſs, without thinking to "interfere in our's."

"I aſk your pardon, gentlemen!" (ſaid my maſter, who knew their power too well to diſpute with them) "It was only a mi- "take. I by no means preſume to inter- "fere with you; and ſhall be proud to exe- "cute your orders, on whatever terms you "think proper. I ſuppoſe though our for- "mer *compoſition* is to end. Proviſions will "now come in from every part, ſo that we "can never think of keeping them up at "the former prices."

"Can't you ſo?" (anſwered the General) "That ſhall be your own fault then; and "your own loſs too, I can tell you. Let "proviſions come in as they will, no one "ſhall ſell an ounce here without our per- "miſſion, and that ſhall be on our own "terms, you may be aſſured. Our hands "are not tied up by laws. Ours is *a mili- "tary government*, in which we can do what "we pleaſe without being accountable to "any one. So you may go on, as be- "fore.

"But gentlemen," (replied my maſter) "you ſhould conſider that the whole odium "of this will fall upon me, as you do not

" appear in it, ſo that I ſhall loſe my cha-
" racter for ever."

" Your character! Hah! hah! hah!" (interrupted the General) " A ſutler's charac-
" ter! I ſhall never be able to bear the word
" again! Pray my good friend what cha-
" racter had a ſutler ever to loſe, that
" would not be a greater loſs to the finder?
" Come! here's my ſervice to you. Go on
" with your buſineſs, and make money, and
" never fear ſuffering by the loſs of your
" character. It is time for us to go, and
" ſettle what taxes we ſhall lay upon the
" different kinds of merchandize, that ſhall
" be brought here. *Our duties* ſhall be paid,
" as well as thoſe of any king of them all.
" This is our reign; and if we do not make
" the moſt it, we have no one to blame,
" but ourſelves.

" And as rich as ſo many kings you will
" be;" (ſaid my maſter) " if you can carry
" off things in the manner you ſay.—

" As to our being rich!" (returned the Admiral) " that depends entirely upon our
" own management. Our Principals indeed
" will be rich enough, which is all they care
" for; not what becomes of us, whom they
" would have do their buſineſs for nothing,
" or next to it. But they ſhall find them-
" ſelves miſtaken. Every thing muſt go
" through our hands; and *gold in handling*
" *will ſtick to the fingers*, as the ſong ſays.

" We

"We ſhall feather our neſts, in ſpite of "them. They cannot do without us; and "will hardly be ſond of calling us to too "ſtrict an account, for fear of our telling "tales. To be ſure the great harveſt will "be there's; but we will take toll.

"I don't doubt but you will," (ſaid my maſter) "twice over for fear of miſtake, "as the miller does. Why you'll make "ſuch fortunes, that you wont know what "to do with yourſelves.

"Never fear that!" (anſwered the General) "we ſhall not be at a loſs. For my "part, I deſign to buy a borough, and puſh "my fortune in Parliament. That's the "genteeleſt buſineſs a gentleman can follow "now, and the readieſt way of advancing "in life, and making a family.——

"Now I think otherwiſe;" (ſaid the Admiral) "and that it is the moſt ungenteel "way; ſuch dirty jobs are required for "every thing a man gets, that it is beneath "a gentleman to do them. My ſcheme is "to buy an *Iriſh Peerage* at once, and then "live ſplendidly, without troubling myſelf "about any thing. Or if I ſhould grow "tired of idleneſs, go into Parliament there, "and turn *Patriot*, and make ſpeeches for "the good of my country.

"Both your ſchemes may be very good!" (ſaid my maſter) "but my ambition is not "ſo high as either, at leaſt as yet. I will

"try

" try to get a *Contract*; and then I ſhall " not fear making a fortune ſufficient to do " what you propoſe, or more if I chuſe it; " without being ſneered at, for my folly. " You may ſay what your will, but there is " more to be got by a *contract*, than by " every other way; and therefore it is the " genteeleſt in my opinion. How many *con-* " *tractors* have I ſeen buy noblemen's fine " houſes, and members of Parliament's eſ- " tates, with the profits of a ſingle cam- " paign? And ſo *My Lord*, and you moſt " honourable *Mr. Member*, I am your hum- " ble ſervant."

" Honeſt *Mr. Contractor*" (replied both at the ſame time) " Yours.

CHAP. XV.

Affecting conſequences of carrying the foregoing ſchemes into execution; with the concluſion of the character and hiſtory of CHRYSAL's *maſter.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

AS ſoon as this worthy pair had left my maſter, he ſet about his buſineſs of preying upon the neceſſities of every one, who came near him, with as much keenneſs as a vulture tears a carrion, and with as little

little feeling, or he could never have gone through with it.

The tranſactions I now ſaw are a pain to memory. For the few firſt days after their ſucceſs, the officers, under the ſame intoxication with my late maſter, the ſerjeant, gave a looſe to every kind of extravagance, to compenſate to themſelves for the wants and hardſhips they had ſuffered. But no ſooner had they advanced near the limits, preſcribed to their credit, than the whole ſcene changed.

The firſt mention of the amount of their reſpective ſhares was like a clap of thunder burſting over their heads. Their aſtoniſhment for ſome time deprived them of their ſenſes. But when they were able to make a proper enquiry, and found the caſe to be too true, their rage broke through all bounds, and roſe almoſt to deſperation. *The horrours of a jail, the cries of a ſtarving family*, every aggravation of human miſery ſtared them in the face, and made the very thought of returning to their native country too terrible to be endured. But there was no remedy. Thoſe, from whom alone it could proceed, were too much intereſted to liſten to their complaints; and inſtead of preventing, permitted their authority to be proſtituted to compleat their ruin, in the manner propoſed by their agents, ſo that the unhappy

py victims were forced to ſubmit to the terms impoſed upon them.

The conſequence of this, as I have ſaid before, was that to drown reflection, they ſpent whatever trifle remained to them on concluding the bargains, which ſealed their ruin, in ſtill greater exceſſes, and ſo precipitated the diſtreſs, they fear'd.

As for the private men, the impoſitions they ſuffered were if poſſible ſtill ſeverer, (though from their inſenſibility perhaps not ſo ſeverely felt) as the *management* of their affairs went through many more hands, every one of whom had a pull at them, down to the very loweſt claſs of the harpies which prey upon an army, ſo that what remained to them was too trifling to be of any ſervice, even to the very few, who ſtruggled with their neceſſities in order to ſave it.

I have not entered minutely into the particulars of this horrid ſcene. This ſlight ſketch will give you a general notion of it, and that is as much as an humane heart can bear. Indeed no deſcription could reach the truth. I ſhall therefore only juſt finiſh the outlines of my maſter's character, and then paſs on to the occurrences in my next ſervice.

The extortions to which he was himſelf forced to ſubmit, from thoſe in authority, took off every ſhadow of ſhame (to conſcience he had long been a ſtranger) and added

added double keenneſs to his natural propenſity to extortion, by giving it what he thought the appearance of juſtice, and provoking him to wreak his reſentment upon others, for what he ſuffered himſelf from thoſe above his reach.

The opportunities for exerting his talents this way were infinite in a profeſſion that is a myſtery of iniquity too complicated to be unravelled, too black to be conceived, but upon experience, which he had acquired to the moſt conſummate degree, in the gradual progreſſion of his life.

A natural ſharpneſs of genius, which ought to have been curbed not encouraged, had influenced his parents to bind him when very young to an attorney, under whom he learned, beſide other valuable qualifications, the nice diſtinctions between law and juſtice, ſo as to know critically how far he could infringe upon the latter, without danger of getting within the reach of the former: But encouraged by much ſucceſs he had at length unluckily happened to go too near thoſe boundaries, and been obliged to quit that profeſſion; after ſome common ſteps of deſcent from which, ſuch as *bailiff's follower*, *knight of the poſt*, and *bully to a bawdy-houſe*, he ſtopped in that of footman to a beau, from which the neceſſary arts of *prevaricating*, *lying*, and *evading diſagreeable demands*, the qualifications of his former character,

character, ſoon raiſed him to be his *gentleman*.

In this ſtation he added to his ſtock of accompliſhments, natural and acquired, *pimping*, *ſervility*, *adulation*, and *an abſolute command of countenance*, on the ſtrength of all which, together with ſome little money, the fruits of his honeſt induſtry, on his maſter's fixing his habitation in a jail, he ſet up a tavern, where his *ſecond-hand politeneſs* and *cringing behaviour* ſoon brought him into buſineſs, that enabled him to live better than he could have any right to have expected, and would in time have procured him an independance.

This ſucceſs, which would have ſatisfied a reaſonable perſon, only raiſed his ambition, and made him deſpiſe his buſineſs. Accordingly he commenced *wine-merchant*, as more ſuitable to a *gentleman*, in which profeſſion he went on, *till his one-horſe chaiſe*, *his country-houſe*, *and kept-miſtreſs* would have brought him back to his primitive poverty, had not his knowledge of the world taught him how to ſecrete from his creditors, ſomething to try his hand upon in ſome other way, when he pitched upon his preſent occupation of *a ſutler*, in which this account of his life ſhews he was moſt eminently fitted to make a figure.

Thus qualified in himſelf, and ſupported by his employers, he proceeded making his bargains,

bargains, with a ſucceſs, to which it may be thought no regard to honeſty, no ſenſe of compaſſion was the leaſt impediment. He flattered, profeſſed the higheſt reſpect and attachment, and preſſed his goods upon his deſtined victims, with every inſinuating art, till he got them into his ſnare, when he directly put on all the inſolence of power, and made even ruin ſtill more wretched by the cruelty with which he drove them to it, the inſenſibility with which he treated them after. How often have I ſeen him refuſe to truſt for a glaſs of what he called wine to cool his raging thirſt, and comfort his fainting heart, the man whom but the day or two before he had cajoled into the exceſſes, which drew him into that diſtreſs.

After ſome days of painful attention to ſuch ſhocking ſcenes, I had the pleaſure of being paid away to the captain of a merchant's ſhip, for ſome liquours, which he had the addreſs to deceive the vigilance of the ruling powers, and all their emiſſaries, and convey *impoſt-free* to my maſter.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL's maſter ſwallows a pill, and pleads an important cauſe without ſucceſs. A curious method of parrying one falſe oath by another, with the firſt oath taken by the maſter of a merchant-man. He ſhews another inſtance of his ſkill in ſteering clear of perjury, but without his former ſucceſs. His notion of conſcience. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

THE care, which I knew to be taken to detect and puniſh this kind of *illicit* trade, made me wonder at firſt that it ſhould even be attempted; but I ſoon found that the danger of ſuch detection when it depends ſolely on the confeſſion of thoſe concerned, however forceful the means made uſe of to extort that confeſſion, is held at nought by a ſet of people, bred in the groſſeſt ignorance of every principle of moral virtue, or religious obligation, and hardened by long habit into contempt of whatever claſhes with their intereſt.

When I came into the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, he was going to attend the two *great men*, whoſe converſation with the ſutler, I have juſt now related, in obedience to a ſum-

a ſummons ſent him the moment he entered the harbour. The reception he met with was ſuited to their importance. He was obliged to wait a conſiderable time, before they were at leiſure to ſee him, when being admitted to their preſence, and having delivered in his bill of lading, and *taken his oath*, that he had no *private trade* on board, nor any thing which was not contained in that account; they informed him what *duties* he muſt pay on every article, before he ſhould be permitted to land them.

My maſter, though he was ſufficiently apprized of this before, affected ſurprize, and attempted to expoſtulate with them on the illegality, and injuſtice of ſuch a demand, alledging that the goods had been purchaſed at the higheſt prices in order to ſend a ſpeedy and effectual ſupply to the troops, who were known to want them, ſo that there could be no advance made upon them, which could defray ſuch additional duties; that his owners, not in the leaſt ſuſpecting any ſuch, had given him no power to pay them; and that many of the commodities being of a periſhable nature, muſt be damaged if not permitted to be landed directly, by which means not only the merchants would be great loſers, but alſo the troops ſuffer ſeverely for the want of common neceſſaries, which they could not otherwiſe be ſupplied with.

But

But all he could ſay had no effect. They did not even deign to make him any anſwer, farther than that they had authority for what they did, and expected obedience, not arguments, which they had not leiſure to liſten to.

Such a repulſe, however unjuſt in itſelf, and perſonally offenſive in the manner of it, was far from giving my maſter any concern. On the contrary, the difficulties, which it threw upon the buſineſs of his owners, afforded him an opportunity of carrying on *his own private trade* to better advantage, which no oaths they could deviſe were able to put a ſtop to, as an inſtance or two of his conduct will ſhew.

Some ſuſpicion having ariſen of his commerce with the ſutler, of which no direct proof could be obtained, he was ſummoned to appear before the tax-gatherers *to acquit himſelf by his oath*, of ſo heinous an offence.

The ſutler, who knew the conſequence of being convicted, and with all his knowledge of the world ſaw no poſſibility of avoiding it, gave himſelf up as ruined: But my maſter ſoon ſhewed him the convenience of a conſcience trained to ſwearing, for calling upon him the morning they were to appear at the dread tribunal, and ſeeing him ſo caſt down, "Chear up, brother," (ſaid he) "I'll "bring you ſafe through this ſtreight! By "the

" the virtue and contents of this book" (pulling one out of his pocket, and kiſſing it in form) " I will never ſwear that you have " bought any thing from me; ſo throw off " that ſneaking, *Tyburn* look, and come a- " long."

Such an aſſurance naturally gave the ſutler ſome ſpirits; though he could not conceive how he meant to make it good; but a little time cleared up the myſtery, and ſhewed him the force of a cuſtom-houſe oath.

As ſoon as the two culprits appeared before their judges, the latter aſſuming all the dignity of their office, exaggerated the charge in the ſtrongeſt colours, and adminiſtering the oath to my maſter, demanded in an authoritative tone, whether he had not ſold *uncuſtomed* goods to the ſutler, and to what amount; who not in the leaſt diſconcerted either by the queſtion, or the manner in which it was put, " Why look ye, gentle- " men," (anſwered he, turning the *quid* in his cheek, and pulling up his breeches at the hips, with both his hands) " as to that af- " fair, by the virtue of my oath, *if I ſhould* " *ſwear that I ſold him any, I ſhould be for-* " *ſworn*, and I'll always try to weather that " point, if I can."——

As there was no more than a general ſuſpicion againſt the criminals, this anſwer ſatisfied the ſagacity of their judges, and they were diſmiſſed with flying colours.

When they were alone, "Well!" (ſaid my maſter, ſhaking his friend by the hand) "I told you I'd bring you off. Let that "be an example to you for the future. *None* "*but fools convict themſelves*; and *none but* "*greater fools expect it.* I ſhould have little "buſineſs in the merchant's ſervice, if I "ſcrupled to ſwallow ſuch a pill as that "every day of my life! No! no! they muſt "be cunning if they can make an oath, that "will ſtick in the throat of the Captain of a "merchant-man, even if he can't find an "opening to ſteer through, as was the caſe "here. We have a *ſalvo* for ſuch things. "*The firſt oath we take as ſoon as we get into* "*employment, is never to ſwear the truth to* "*a Cuſtom-houſe-officer while we live*; *ſo* "*that all the oaths they give us go for no-*"*thing.*"

But with all his cleverneſs, he ſometimes failed of ſucceſs. A Lieutenant of a man of war happening, as he was *rowing guard* one night to ſee a boat put off from our ſhip, purſued it in hopes of making ſome repriſals for all the extortions he and his brethren daily ſuffered from every one concerned in trade, as he knew it muſt be a *ſmuggler*.

The hope of prize made the crew of the Lieutenant's boat pull with ſuch ſpirit, that they gained faſt upon the *chace*, which the others ſeeing, and that it was impoſſible for them to get clear off, they threw their car-

goe

goe over-board to diſappoint their purſuers of their expected booty, and then ran the boat a-ſhore to ſave themſelves from being taken, leaving her of courſe to the captors for their trouble, who towed her away in triumph.

The chief of the ſmugglers was my maſter's ſon, who in the account he gave him of the affair on his return, was proceeding to tell him the names of thoſe who had been with him, when the father ſtopping him ſhort, "Avaſt!" (ſaid he) "Coil up your "tongue. I deſire to hear no more of them. "Have you a mind to make me forſwear "myſelf when I go to recover my boat? "For have her again you know I muſt, as I "can't get another here, nor carry on any "buſineſs without one."——

Accordingly next morning he made a publick enquiry after his boat, which he pretended had been ſtolen from his ſhip's ſide, and finding her in the poſſeſſion of the lieutenant, demanded to have her reſtored directly, and on his refuſal had him ſummoned before the officers of the cuſtoms, who were judges in ſuch affairs.

As he grounded his claim on her having been taken without his privity, and by perſons unknown to him, he was put to the common teſt of an oath, Whether he knew who had been in her, when ſhe was purſued by the captors. "By the virtue of *my oath*, Gen-

" tlemen" (anſwered he without the leaſt he-ſitation) " *I do not know one of them.*"

So *direct* an anſwer ſatisfyed the judges, who were no ways concerned in the affair; but that was not the caſe with the lieutenant: " Hold, Sir!" (ſaid he to my maſter, who was ſheering off, laughing in his ſleeve) " What is that you ſay?"——

" I ſay," (anſwered my maſter, nothing diſconcerted) " That I don't know *one* of " them."——

" *One of them!*" (returned the lieutenant, who inſtantly ſaw through his evaſion) " But " don't you know *any* of them though? " Take care what you ſay! Perhaps I know " more than you think I do!"——

" Why as to that" (replied my maſter laughing) " I cannot ſay ſo much. Perhaps " I may know ſome of them."——

" How!" (interpoſed the judge, offended at an anſwer, which he thought ſhewed a ſlight to his authority) " Did you not ſwear " this moment, that you did not know one " of them?"——

" No more do I!" (anſwered my maſter) " There were twelve in the boat, of whom I " know only eleven; and ſure in that caſe, " I can ſafely ſwear I do not know *one*, " that is *the twelfth* of them. Hah! hah! " hah!"——

" Take care, Sir, (replied the judge) " how you attempt to trifle in this manner

" before

" before us again. You know the punish-
" ment of perjury, if you ſhould be caught
" tripping."——

" Never fear!" (ſaid my maſter) " I know
" the *compaſs* of my conſcience too well for
" that. I can ſteer as near that wind as ano-
" ther. *Thus! thus! and no nearer*, is my
" trim. I'll never break an oath; but if I
" can give it the *go by*, at the *lee ſide* thus,
" by a double-meaning, I hope that's no of-
" fence."——

Then turning to the lieutenant, " Well,
" Sir!" (continued he) " it ſeems *you have*
" *carried too much ſail for me this trip! But*
" *if I meet you upon a wind again, mind your*
" *helm, or I may chance to fall aboard you.*
" However, ſince I can't have my boat
" cheaper, I muſt e'en come to your terms,
" ſo what do you aſk for her?"——

To this propoſal the lieutenant made no objection: Setting therefore his price, " Zouns!" (ſaid my maſter) " I believe you " have no conſcience at all, to aſk a man ſo " much, and for his own boat!"——

At his mentioning *conſcience*, all preſent ſet up a loud laugh, and repeated the word.

Nothing abaſh'd at which, " You may laugh " as much as you pleaſe (continued he) but " my notion of conſcience is not to aſk out of " reaſon, for any thing one has to diſpoſe " of; and ſo, Sir, if you have a mind to part

"with the boat, I'll give you half what you "ask; and I should think even that too "much, but that I want her, and do not "know where to get another."

"And as I want to sell her, and do not "know where to get another purchaser!" (answered the lieutenant) "you shall have "her. Not that I think she comes very "cheap to you upon the whole neither! "You have sworn well for her at least."

"As to that matter," (replied my master) "that is my business, and not yours. "Here is your money; and that is all you "need care for."—Saying this, he paid him for the boat, and then walked off, without concern or shame.—I here quitted his service, of which I was heartily tired, and entered into that of the lieutenant.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome reflections on the policy of impoſing oaths of exculpation. The proper method of preſerving the validity of oaths, with the conſequences of their being adminiſtred indiſcriminately to all perſons, and on all occaſions. An uncommon lecture from a captain of a man of war to his officers, repreſents ſome polite amuſements in an odd light.*

I SEE you are ſhocked at ſuch flagrant inſtances of profligacy, of bare-faced contempt of every thing moſt ſacred, and important. They certainly are a reproach to human nature; but that reproach muſt not be confined to thoſe alone, who obviouſly incur it. They who from falſe principles of policy give the occaſion, againſt the conviction of reaſon and experience, are at leaſt equally guilty.

The impotency of man to reſiſt temptation is ſuch that he is taught to pray againſt it! Why then ſhould thoſe, who are entruſted with the care of directing his actions in the common intercourſe of life, lay ſnares to lead him into it, which there is no probability of his avoiding?

Appealing to the atteſtation of the Deity, is moſt certainly the higheſt aſſurance poſſible to be given by any being, who has a ſenſe of his dependance on that Deity; nor ſhould ever be given but on the moſt important occaſions, and in the moſt ſolemn manner; nor accepted but from ſuch as may be preſumed to underſtand the nature of it.

In ſuch circumſtances it would never be violated. Man is not ſo deſperately abandoned as to run with his eyes open into inexplicable perdition. But when that atteſtation is given lightly, for every trifle, when it is placed in oppoſition to intereſt, and demanded from ſuch as cannot be ſuppoſed to know its conſequence, the reverence which ſhould be its guard is taken off, the violation becomes familiar, and of courſe, the end, for which it is thus impiouſly, and injudiciouſly proſtituted, diſappointed; and by that means the moſt ſacred aſſurance of life rendered void, the bond of ſocial confidence and ſafety broken.

The effects of this abſurd policy of making the obligations of Religion the common teſt of truth on trivial occaſions, and where intereſt is concerned, are more extenſive than is generally imagined. The immediate wants of nature engroſs the attention of the greater part of mankind too much to let them ſee the congruity of moral virtue, however evident to exerted reaſon; wherefore the threats

and

and promiſes of Religion were found neceſſary to enforce the practice of it: But as the accompliſhment of thoſe is placed at a diſtance, when they interfere with preſent enjoyments, their force wears off, the threats loſe their terrours, and the promiſes are ſlighted by thoſe, who look no farther than the inſtant moment; and this is the great ſource of that immorality and irreligion ſo prevalent in life, and which will never be corrected, *till legiſlators make oaths leſs common, prevent their interfering with the ſwearer's own intereſt*, (as in the inſtances which gave occaſion to theſe reflections) *explain their nature before they are adminiſtered, and inflict inſtant puniſhment on their violation.*

My new maſter had but juſt returned on board, when the captain received orders to go, and aſſiſt the operations of the war, in another part of the world. The news raiſed every one's ſpirits. The ſight of a place in which moſt of them had been guilty of exceſſes, which drew them into diſtreſs, and where all had been ſo wretchedly diſappointed, was neceſſarily diſagreeable; and conſequently a removal to another, where a new object attracted their attention from ſuch reflections, and awoke new hopes, however likely to end in the ſame manner as the former, gave them pleaſure.

There was a decency in the behaviour of both men and officers in this ſhip, ſo very

different from what I had ſeen in others, as to ſtrike me with an agreeable ſurprize. But I was not long at a loſs for the reaſon. As ſoon as the ſhip was under ſail, the captain ſummoned all his officers into the great cabbin, and after ſome general inſtructions about their duty, "Gentlemen," (ſaid he, addreſſing himſelf to my maſter, and another, who had been but lately appointed to his ſhip) "as we have never ſailed together "before, I muſt deſire your attention to a "few hints, which I always take the liberty "to give, in ſuch circumſtances.

"We are now ſhut up together in a priſon, where the unavoidable inconveniences "of our ſituation make all our care neceſſary to prevent its becoming inſupportable to us. For this reaſon, the firſt "thing I recommend to you is, *not to game.* "Beſide the danger of diſagreement when "the paſſions are agitated by the viciſſitudes of play, our pay is ſcarce ſufficient "for our ſupport, ſo that the leaſt loſs muſt "be diſtreſſing, the conſequence of which "muſt be general unhappineſs, for who can "ſee his companion miſerable, without ſharing in his miſery?

"There is another thing, againſt which, "though not commonly conſidered in this "light, I muſt earneſtly caution you, as inevitably throwing a gloom over that chearfulneſs of mind, which is the greateſt

"happi-

" happineſs of life, and to us muſt ſupply " the place of every other happineſs, and " this is *the vice of profane curſing and ſwear-* " *ing*, to the reproach of our ſervice too " prevalent among us.

" There is no man, however hardened in " this deteſtable habit, but knows it to be a " crime, and feels a check from within every " time he is guilty of it, the repetition of " which ſelf-accuſation ſours his temper, " and makes him diſſatisfyed with himſelf, " and every perſon and thing about him. " For the truth of this I appeal to unvaried " experience. Who ever ſaw a man ſerene- " ly chearful, that was addicted to this vice? " (I might ſay indeed to any vice, but as " our ſituation precludes us from the practice " of moſt others, I mention theſe only, into " which we may fall) for occaſional mirth " is a very different thing, and too often " leads into conſequences deſtructive of ſere- " nity of mind, eſpecially when it is raiſed " by means inconſiſtent with virtue.

" I do not ſpeak of the effect, which the " practice of virtue has upon our reſolution. " The courage of a *Briton* can never be " doubted; but ſtill there is as much dif- " ference between that of a virtuous, and a " vicious man, as of the ſame perſon when " ſober, or intoxicated with liquor. The " former is uniform, ſteady, and attentive " to improve every advantage, or remedy

" any misfortune; the other boiſterous,
" headlong, and blinded with paſſion; for
" paſſion only can make a man face death,
" who in the cool moments of reflection is
" afraid to die. In a word, one is the cou-
" rage of a man, the other the raſhneſs of a
" brute.

" Againſt theſe two things therefore,
" *gaming*, and *ſwearing*, I take the liberty
" to caution you, as a friend, who is ſin-
" cerely deſirous of your welfare; but there
" is another vice, in reſpect to which I do
" not think myſelf obliged to obſerve the
" ſame delicacy; and this is *drunkenneſs*, which
" is liable to be attended with ſuch danger-
" ous conſequences in our ſituation in par-
" ticular, for I think it unneceſſary to men-
" tion any other, that I ſhall ever exert all
" the authority entruſted to me to ſuppreſs
" it, and therefore it is but juſt for me to
" declare, that no officer, who is once guilty
" of it under my command, ſhall ever do
" duty under me more.

" This, gentlemen, is what I had to ſay to
" you. The obſervation of theſe few hints
" will make us happy among ourſelves, and
" reſpected by our men, without which it
" is impoſſible for us to be well obeyed by
" them; for heedleſs and profligate as they
" may appear, they are the ſevereſt criticks
" on the conduct of their officers, and not
" only like people in higher ſtations, revere

" the

" the virtues which they have not reſolu-
" tion to imitate; but alſo actually do imi-
" tate them in a great degree."

CHAP. XVIII.

The folly of a perſon's proſtituting his character to pleaſe his company, aggravated by the dangerous miſtake of ridicule for applauſe. CHRYSAL's maſter changes place with the chaplain, and preaches him an intereſting ſermon, in which, among remarks more juſt than polite, he gives an uncommon reaſon for the particular deformity of vice in women.

I HAVE already taken notice of the effect, which the advice and example of the captain had upon every one in the ſhip. The officers lived like a family of brothers, and the men did their duty with regularity and pleaſure; but though all paid due reſpect to what he ſaid, it was impoſſible to work ſuch an inſtantaneous reformation, but that ſome of them would now and then jeſt among themſelves upon his conduct, as from compariſon with that of others of his rank, inconſiſtent with his character; and in other reſpects indulge in the levities of diſcourſe and behaviour too general among perſons

not much accuſtomed to the rules of rational converſation.

But whatever allowances the circumſtances of their education might claim for ſuch ſallies in the officers, the perſon who tranſgreſſed moſt was certainly entitled to none. This was the chaplain, who to avoid the imputation of being hypocritically ſanctified, ran into the oppoſite extreme.

The ſelfiſh vanity of man always takes pleaſure in ſeeing any perſon debaſe himſelf, by acting beneath his character, eſpecially if that character is ſuch as appears to be placed in a more reſpectable point of view than their own. The officers, who in general look upon a chaplain as no better than lumber in a ſhip, and think he is placed as a kind of check upon them, were pleaſed with this proſtitution, which he, by a common miſtake of ridicule for applauſe, gave ſtill farther into, *imagining they laughed with him*, when in reality, *they laughed at him.*

But my maſter beheld the matter in another light; and taking an opportunity one day, when the chaplain and he were by themſelves in the ward-room, "I have obſerved "with much concern, Sir," (ſaid he) "that "you are falling into an errour, which I "have known prove fatal to many gentle-"men of your profeſſion. This is depart-"ing from your character, in order to ac-"commodate yourſelf to what you think

"the

" the humour of your company. Believe " me, Sir, no man ever did ſo, who did " not immediately fall into contempt, with " the very people, whoſe approbation he " ſtrove to purchaſe at ſo dear a rate. The " greateſt libertine deſpiſes a clergyman, " who is a libertine; and the reaſon is plain. " *You are ſet apart from the reſt of mankind* " *to perform the rites of Religion, and incul-* " *cate virtue by your precepts and example;* " *and for this you are paid by the publick,* " *who expect that you ſhould earn your wages,* " *by doing your duty; and look upon thoſe* " *who do not, as no better than cheats.*" " This may appear an odd way of ſpeaking; " but it is true nevertheleſs.

" On the other hand, where a clergyman " fulfills his duty, and enforces his preach- " ing by his practice, though he may not " abſolutely reform all thoſe with whom he " converſes, yet he will certainly work this " good effect, that he will keep them in " awe, and prevent their running into out- " rageous lengths of wickedneſs, at leaſt in " his preſence. For whatever people may " inconſiderately imagine, *no man ever acted* " *in character, who was not reſpected; no man* " *ever acted out of character, who was not* " *deſpiſed.*

" Do but reflect a moment, in what light " you yourſelf would look upon a lady, who " ſhould ſpeak obſcenely, ſwear, drink, and

" talk

" talk of fighting, and it will ſhew you the " juſtice of this remark. For what makes " theſe vices ſo particularly hateful in a wo- " man, is not any thing in their nature par- " ticularly contradictory to the ſex, more " than ours, but becauſe they are contrary " to her character.

" I beg your pardon, Sir, for talking to " you in this free manner, in reſpect to your " conduct, which I am ſenſible concerns " only yourſelf; but as the errours you have " fallen into appear to have ariſen merely from " inadvertency, and miſtake, I think it my " duty to caution you againſt the danger of " them, particularly in your preſent ſitua- " tion, with which I have had the opportunity " of being much better acquainted, than you " poſſibly can be. I was in the ſervice " long, very long, before you were born; " and have been intimate with many chap- " lains, but never knew one who proſtituted " his character to humour his company, who " was not neglected by them, when they " had it in their power to have ſerved him; " as on the contrary, I have known many " inſtances of thoſe who have reaped the " happy fruits of a regular, and virtuous " conduct, by which they acquired an eſteem, " that proved the foundation of their for- " tune; and if all have not been equally " ſucceſsful, their diſappointment muſt be " attributed to ſome other cauſe.

" I would

"I would not by this be underſtood to "advise you to a moroſe diſtance, and ſtiff-"neſs of behaviour, or aſperity of reproof "upon every occaſion. They ſeldom, if "ever, do good, in any ſituation; in yours "they will certainly do hurt, by picquing "falſe pride to act in oppoſition to them, "without regard to the conſequences. An "obliging temper, and a uniformly decent "conduct lead inſenſibly to imitation, where "contradiction or direct admonition would "be held impertinent. Theſe hints are ſo "obvious, that they may ſeem unneceſſary; "but it is want of attention to them which "has made ſo many chaplains miſcarry in "life, and indeed has brought the very cha-"racter into diſrepute."

The chaplain, who wanted neither natural good ſenſe, nor virtuous inclination, was ſtruck with the juſtice and force of this rebuke. He thanked my maſter in the moſt ingenuous manner, and promiſed to regulate his future conduct by his advice. Such a change at firſt naturally expoſed him to the merriment of his companions; but as my maſter took his part, and ſhewed them the injuſtice of ſuch behaviour, it ſoon wore off, and he had the heart-felt ſatisfaction to find himſelf treated with friendly reſpect and confidence by thoſe, whoſe groſs familiarity had before often given him pain, as it evidently implied contempt.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL describes true compaſſion; and ſhews the general conſequence of a man's acknowledging diſtreſs, with the reaſons of it. CHRYSAL's maſter is prevailed upon by his captain to tell him the cauſe of his melancholy, which is removed by an act of uncommon generoſity. CHRYSAL enters into a new ſervice.

AS the captain maintained the moſt friendly intercourſe with his officers, he ſoon obſerved that my maſter laboured under ſome heavy diſtreſs of mind. This naturally raiſed his compaſſion, and *as real compaſſion never ſees diſtreſs, which it is not deſirous of alleviating*, he frequently took occaſion, when they were by themſelves, to turn his diſcourſe upon ſuch ſubjects as he thought might lead him to open himſelf; but finding that modeſty, or a reſerve contracted from long acquaintance with misfortune, and obſervation that *the knowledge of a man's being in diſtreſs always ſinks him in the eſteem of his companions, by cutting off their hopes of ſervice from him, and alarming their apprehenſions of his expecting aſſiſtance from them*, prevented his taking the hint, he reſolved to break through forms, and aſk him directly.

Seeing

Seeing him therefore one day walking the quarter-deck, in a mood of deepeſt melancholy, he called him into the great-cabbin, and deſiring him to ſit down, after a little general chat, "I fear, Sir," (ſaid he) "that "ſomething hangs upon your ſpirits. If "it is proper to be communicated, let me "know what it is, and depend upon every "aſſiſtance in my power to make you eaſy. "I aſk not from idle, or impertinent curi-"oſity."

"Sir," (anſwered my maſter, ſtruck with the manner in which he ſpoke) "I believe "you above the influence of ſuch motives, "and ſhall therefore obey your kind com-"mands without ſcruple. It is too true, "that I am unhappy; and I fear my un-"happineſs is too common. I have devot-"ed my life to a profeſſion in which I have "ſerved my country above forty years with "fidelity; and I will take the liberty to ſay "with ſome ſucceſs: And now when my "conſtitution is broken with wounds, fa-"tigue, and change of climates, when na-"ture calls for reſt, and refreſhment, the "only reward I have to expect is poverty, "and its inſeparable attendant, contempt. "This, Sir, is the cauſe of my unhappi-"neſs; and ſuch a cauſe, as I believe you "will think to be a juſt one."

"Very true, Sir," (replied the captain) "it is a juſt one; and what muſt affect every

"man

"man of ſpirit, and a generous way of "thinking. But you ſhould not yield to it "too far! You are ſtill in the vigour of "life; and while the war continues ſhould "look forward with hope. Though you "have been unſucceſsful hitherto, fortune "may prove more kind."

"Alas, Sir," (returned my maſter) "I "have been ſo long cheated by hope, that "I now deteſt it. When I came out upon "this laſt expedition, our force made me ſo "confident of ſucceſs, and I was ſo well "acquainted with the wealth in the place, "that I unhappily gave way to hope, and "ran into expences, which though far from "being unneceſſary, were imprudent, and "threaten now to involve me in ruin, on "my return home, at it has been thought "proper by our ſuperiours to rate our ſer-"vice in the conqueſt, at ſo low a price."

"If that is the caſe then!" (ſaid the cap-tain) "do not return till matters mend. "Whenever I am ordered home, I'll take "care to get you removed into another ſhip. "Your ſtaying abroad on ſuch an account "is not inconſiſtent with the ſtricteſt ho-"nour, as you do it with an intention true-"ly honeſt."

"Dear Sir," (anſwered my maſter) "that "is very true. But I am precluded even "from the wretched relief of a voluntary "exile. I have a wife, and children at home,

"the

" the apprehenſion of whoſe diſtreſſes drives " me to deſpair. It was to cloath and ſet- " tle them in a little habitation, where they " might enjoy the indiſpenſible neceſſaries " of life with ſome degree of comfort, that " I anticipated my ſucceſs, in the manner I " mentioned; and now as that ſucceſs has " fallen ſo far ſhort of what I thought juſt " expectation, all the former ſavings of my " life (ſavings from the very neceſſities of " nature) will be torn away, by the rapaci- " ous hands of mercileſs creditors, to make " up the deficiency in the articles bought " of themſelves to diſcharge their demands, " and my wretched family thrown upon the " unfriendly world, without its being in my " power to aſſiſt them. I muſt therefore " return, and go into a jail to prevent their " ſtarving in the ſtreets. What affected my- " ſelf only, honeſt indignation enabled me " to ſupport. I have ſeen boys, whoſe ig- " norance I deſpiſed, and men whoſe prin- " ciples I deteſted, preferred to command, " while my ſervices were over-looked; but " as I had not the intereſt of the former, " nor the *modiſh merit* of the latter, I bore " my fate with patience. But to have thoſe " dearer to me than life expoſed to miſery, is " more than I can bear."——

" Nor ſhall you bear it!" (replied the captain, who had feigned to cough to hide the ſympathetick tear, that gliſſened in his eye)

eye) "Nor ſhall you hear it. How much "is the debt, that alarms you? I will ad- "vance it for you directly; and not that "only, I will take upon me to make your "merit (to which I am no ſtranger) known "to your ſuperiours, in ſuch a light as ſhall "not fail of juſt reward."

"O Sir!" (returned my maſter, as ſoon as the fullneſs of his heart gave him utter- ance) "How can I ſubmit to obligations, "to which it is impoſſible I ſhould ever "make any return?"——

"All the return I deſire" (anſwered the captain) "is your friendſhip. Speak! how "much do you want? The Packet is yet in "ſight. I will order a ſignal to be made "for her, and give you a draught upon my "agent."——

"Good Heaven!" (exclaimed my maſ- ter) "Can there be ſuch virtue in man?"—

"Come! what is the ſum?" (interrupt- ed the captain, who wanted to ſhorten a con- verſation, that began to be too affecting to him) "I ſhall think you doubt my ſincer- "ity if you heſitate to accept of my friend- "ſhip."——

"Such a doubt" (returned my maſter, whoſe heart a guſh of tears had lightened) "would be a blacker crime, than ever ſtain- "ed my ſoul! No! I receive your bene- "ficence with humble gratitude, as from "the hand of Heaven, nor will mention

"any

"any other return, but what muſt be made "to that, till it ſhall be pleaſed to bleſs me "with better ability."

Then pulling out his pocket-book, "Here "is the account of what I owe" (continued he, giving him ſome papers, and a purſe containing little more than his ſhare of the price of the ſmuggler's boat:) "And here is all my "worldly wealth, which is no more than an "aſſignment of my miſerable prize-money, "and theſe few pieces of gold, thrown by "fortune in my way, moſtly ſince our hands "were tied up by the capitulation. For "the ballance I muſt be your debtor."

"For the ballance!" (anſwered the captain, returning the purſe, and the aſſignment) "No! you ſhall be my debtor (if you will "call it ſo!) for the whole. It would be "ſtrange friendſhip to ſtrip you of every "thing. You may want yourſelf."——

"Excuſe me, Sir," (interrupted my maſter, unable to ſuppreſs the delicacy, the dignity of honour) "I am not ſo low a wretch, as "to accept of more than I indiſpenſibly want; "and that for perſons dearer to me than "myſelf. If you will not permit me to "make the debt as light as I can, it is im-"poſſible for me to receive your friendſhip, "however eſſential to the happineſs of my "heart. I am ſorry you ſhould have enter-"tained ſo mean an opinion of me."——

"I have the higheſt opinion of you!" (replied the captain, who ſaw what pain he had given

given him) "and ſpoke in the warmth of "my regard, without the moſt diſtant de- "ſign of giving you offence. But you ſhall "make your own terms, on this condition "though, that if you have any occaſion for "money, you will apply to me with the "freedom of a friend."

To ſuch a propoſal, it was impoſſible to refuſe aſſenting. My maſter complied, and the captain taking the money, *&c.* from him, deſired that he would order a ſignal to be made for the Pacquet, and write his letters, while he himſelf ſhould draw a bill upon his agent.—The ſentiments expreſſed by the captain made it a pleaſure to me to paſs into his ſervice on this occaſion.

As ſoon as the lieutenant went out, my new maſter walked a turn or two about his cabbin, in the exalted happineſs of conſcious virtue; and then drawing a bill, for conſiderably more than the lieutenant was to pay, he deſired that he ſhould be called, and, when he entered, "I beg pardon (ſaid he) "for interrupting you, but it is to deſire "that you will preſent my compliments to "your wife, and tell her I beg ſhe will ac- "cept of a trifling preſent from me, which "I have taken the liberty to include in the "bill. Come! no words! In this I will "not be contradicted."

"O Sir!" (anſwered the lieutenant, catching his hand, as he reached him the bill, and

and kiſſing it eagerly) "this is too much! "My heart will burſt."—Saying which, he went out of the cabbin, in a ſilence more expreſſive of his ſoul, than all the flights of eloquence.

CHAP. XX.

Hiſtory of a lieutenant of a man of war. A compariſon between the rewards of merit, in the land, and ſea-ſervices; with a remarkable inſtance of a great man's remembering an old friend. The conſequence of attempting to ſet up for a mender of manners, and of a man's not meeting an opportunity of making himſelf remarkable.

WHEN every thing was ſettled, and the pacquet ſail'd, the lieutenant, deſired leave to wait upon my maſter; and as ſoon as he entered, "I come, Sir, (ſaid "he) to pay you the thanks, which the "fullneſs of my heart would not let me ut- "ter before. You have raiſed me to hap- "pineſs from the loweſt ſtate of deſpair."—

"Hold my friend!" (anſwered my maſter taking his hand, and ſqueezing it tenderly) "Speak no more of it, I conjure you. "I am abundantly overpaid for what I have "done, by the pleaſure of having ſerved a

"man,

" man of merit; and ſhall think you re-
" pine at my happineſs in being able to
" purchaſe that pleaſure, if I ever hear the
" affair mentioned more."

To relieve the lieutenant, whom he ſaw oppreſſed with gratitude, he then changed the converſation to another ſubject, when the lieutenant ſhewed ſo much good ſenſe, and ſolid judgment, that my maſter could not forbear expreſſing his aſtoniſhment, that ſuch a man ſhould have been ſo long unpromoted in the ſervice.

" If you can have patience to hear the
" ſtory of my life (anſwered the lieutenant)
" it will ſoon explain that difficulty to you.
" My father was an officer in the army, who
" was rewarded for the loſs of a leg, and
" thirty years ſervice, with the half-pay of
" a captain of foot. As he had a wife and
" children to maintain and provide for, he
" retired to a cheap county, where he lived
" in the moſt rigid œconomy in hopes of
" ſaving, for he could not make any thing,
" being precluded from every kind of in-
" duſtry, by the profeſſion to which he had
" devoted his youth.

" The firſt acquaintance a ſtranger gets in
" a country place is the parſon of the pariſh.
" It was my father's happineſs to fix his ha-
" bitation, where there was a clergyman
" who would have been a valuable acquain-
" tance in any place, and who was equally
" happy

" happy, in the acquiſition of a rational ac-
" quaintance in him. The common inter-
" courſe of neighbourhood was therefore
" ſoon improved between them into the
" ſtrongeſt friendſhip, in the intimacy of
" which, as my father would often natural-
" ly mention his anxiety for his children, his
" friend perſwaded him to breed me, the
" eldeſt, to the ſea-ſervice, in which he
" thought he himſelf might be able to ſerve
" me, by his intereſt with ſeveral comman-
" ders, with whom he had been acquainted
" formerly, when chaplain to a man of war.
" That is the ſervice!" (would the good man
" ſay, with pleaſure ſparkling in his eyes)
" That is the ſervice in which merit is never
" diſregarded. You would not have been
" laid aſide after thirty years, to pine upon
" five ſhillings a day, if you had been bred
" to the ſea. No! no! merit is all that is
" neceſſary there.

" Such an argument was too flattering to
" my father's hopes to be reſiſted. Though
" he felt the evil of not having been bred
" to buſineſs himſelf, he was charmed at
" the thought of his ſon's being placed in
" the way of riſing to an higher ſphere,
" and readily aſſented to the advice of his
" friend, who not content with meer advice,
" inſiſted on taking me home with him,
" and giving me ſuch an education, as ſhould
" qualify me to make a figure in the pro-

" ſeſſion to which he had directed me. "If " ever a man of merit in the ſea-ſervice " (would he often ſay) fails of riſing, it is " for want of having had a good education " to found his hopes upon. A meer ſea- " man may work a ſhip, but an Admiral " ſhould be a ſcholar."

" How well this reaſoning was founded " experience daily ſhews; though it would " be ingratitude in me to arraign it, as the " little taſte for letters, which I acquired " from his care, if it has not contributed " to my advancement, has at leaſt enabled " me to ſupport the ſhock of diſappointment, " as well as to avoid many evils, into which " I have ſeen others, who had not the ſame " advantage, fall.

" At ſixteen, (for he inſiſted that it was " moſt wretched policy to turn a boy looſe " upon the world before he had come to " the uſe of reaſon, and was well inſtructed " in the principles of morality and reli- " gion, for the ſake of gaining a couple of " years advance:) At ſixteen, I ſay, I was ſent " to ſea, provided with a cheſt of books, " and mathematical inſtruments, and a good " ſuit of cloaths, not to diſcredit the re- " commendation which my beſt friend gave " me to an Admiral, with whom he had " been moſt intimate, when a lieutenant; " and whoſe readineſs to ſerve him in any " thing, he would not admit a doubt of.

" On

"On my preſenting my letter, the Ad-
"miral at firſt had forgot the name, but re-
"collecting himſelf at length on my men-
"tioning ſome circumſtances which I had
"often heard my friend dwell upon with
"pleaſure, "Very true," (ſaid he) "I re-
"member him now. He made the beſt
"bowl of punch of any man in the navy."—

"This was all the notice the *great man*
"took of him, or of me on his account,
"except I ſhould add, that on his captain's
"obſerving I ſhould make a good figure on
"the quarter-deck, I was directly rated a
"midſhipman; a favour for which I ſoon
"found I was indebted to his caution of
"ſending me well dreſſed, much more than
"to his intereſt.

"Though I felt this diſappointment of
"my firſt hopes very ſeverely, on my friend's
"account, as well as my own, I could not
"think of ſhocking him with the news, but
"ſaying in general terms that I had been
"well received, reſolved to apply myſelf to
"my buſineſs, and try whether I could not
"deſerve that favour, which he had failed
"to procure me.

"As I had been accuſtomed to converſa-
"tion very different from that of thoſe,
"with whom alone I could now converſe,
"I took every opportunity, when off duty,
"of running to my books. But the relief
"I found from this was for the preſent

" over-ballanced by the general ridicule, into " which it drew me; eſpecially as I not only " avoided obſcenity, ſwearing, and drink- " ing myſelf, but had alſo been ſo impru- " dent as to rebuke others for them. I " was immediately nick-named *the parſon*, " and avoided by every one in the ſhip.

" I need not deſcribe to you the ſituation " of a *petit* officer, inſulted by thoſe below " him, ridiculed by his equals, and looked " down upon with contempt by his ſu- " periours, who forget they ever were in his " ſtation themſelves. I bore it for fifteen " years, at the end of which time, having " the good fortune to be ſent to *London*, " with a preſs-gang, on purpoſe to mortify " me, for I always diſliked that particular " duty, more than any other in the ſervice, " on ſeeing an advertiſement in the news- " papers, that all who were qualified by " their ſtanding to be lieutenants in the navy, " ſhould attend to paſs their examination, I " offered myſelf without any other intro- " duction, or intereſt, and was appointed to " a ſhip.

" In this ſtation I have now done my duty " for five and twenty years, without repre- " henſion; but as I have no *corporation-in- " tereſt* to puſh me at home, none of the " *modern polite accompliſhments*, to recom- " mend me to the favourites of fortune, " whom I occaſionally meet in the ſervice,

" nor

" nor have ever had the good luck to find " an opportunity of making myſelf remark- " able, by any action of *eclat*, though in " itſelf no more than a ſucceſsful blunder, " my uniform conduct and care have paſſed " unnoticed, and I remain a lieutenant ſtill."

The circumſtances of this ſtory affected my maſter in the ſtrongeſt manner. He took the lieutenant by the hand, and deſiring him not to deſpair, repeated his promiſe of uſing all his intereſt to ſerve him, of the ſucceſs of which he had no reaſon to doubt.

Nothing particular happened during our voyage. One inſtance though of my maſter's conduct in his military capacity I cannot forbear mentioning, as it ſhews his character in the ſtrongeſt light, which was, that he never interfered in the buſineſs of his officers, but if he happened to ſee any thing which he diſapproved, inſtead of interpoſing his own authority publickly, and giving contrary orders, he always ſpoke privately to the officer on duty, and giving his direction under the appearance of advice, let the alteration proceed as immediately from him, by which means he ſpared him the pain of being found fault with before the men, and conſequently leſſened in their opinion.

This delicacy not only endeared him to them all, but alſo contributed greatly to advance the ſervice. For as every officer knew that he ſhould have the credit, or bear the

blame of his own actions, they all exerted themſelves with the utmoſt ardour; whereas on the contrary, where a captain is continually interfering, and leaving nothing for his officers to do, they grow careleſs of courſe, and do nothing, as they know he will arrogate to himſelf the merit of ſucceſs; if they do not even take a malignant pleaſure in any miſcarriage, the blame of which they have ſo juſt an opportunity of throwing upon him.

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon method of carrying on a war; with the danger of ſpeaking the truth too plainly, at an improper time. CHRYSAL'*s maſter meets his brother. Some account of him. He repreſents certain matters in an odd light.* CHRYSAL *enters into his ſervice. Concluſion of his character.* CHRYSAL *quits his ſervice on an uncommon occaſion, for one, from which he paſſes in the uſual courſe of buſineſs into that of the general.*

WHEN we arrived at the place of our deſtination, we found the ſhore covered with an extenſive incampment, and every thing wearing the appearance of the moſt active war.

The

The firſt thing my maſter did was of courſe to wait upon the General, whoſe operations he was ſent to aſſiſt. He met him viewing an occaſional fortification, which he had cauſed to be raiſed to train his army to the method of making regular ſieges and attacks; and marking out a piece of ground to be ſowed with vegetables to correct the bad effects of the ſalt proviſions, which his men had lived upon in their paſſage thither, and preſerve them in health.

The account he received from my maſter of the heavy loſs ſuſtained in the expedition from which he had juſt come, gave him viſible pleaſure, as it ſeemed to ſet his own conduct, which was diametrically the reverſe of that obſerved there, in the moſt advantageous light.

"I wonder" (ſaid he looking around him with an air of conſcious exultation) "how "officers can reconcile it to themſelves to "throw away the lives of their men, in ſuch "a manner! For my part, I act upon very "different principles. I take care not only "to give my troops an inſight into all the "various branches of the military art, but "alſo to keep them in ſuch health as may "enable them to reap the advantage of their "experience. There is nothing ſo bad in "war as precipitation. It was the ſole "cauſe of the late General's defeat and "death."——

"Yes!" (interrupted an officer who ſtood near, and had hearkened to him with evident impatience) "Delay is full as bad. Your "troops want neither health nor experience "to conquer every oppoſition they can poſ- "ſibly meet; and will accompliſh the end "they were ſent upon before your cabbages "are fit for them to eat, if you will but "lead them againſt their enemies, and not "give them time to retire with their effects "into places, whither it is impoſſible for an "army to purſue them, while your men "waſte their time and ſpirits in the fooliſh "parade of mock battles, and ſieges, till "they loſe their ardour by delays which can "anſwer no end, but that of protracting the "war, and thereby lengthening a lucrative "command."

Such an attack was quite unexpected, and ſtruck the General with equal ſurprize and indignation, as it touched him in the tendereſt part; however, diſſembling his paſſion, of which he had an abſolute command, "I "would have you to know, Sir," (ſaid he) "that I think it the higheſt aſſurance in "you to attempt cenſuring my conduct, "who are ſent meerly to execute my orders. "When I aſk your opinion, it will be time "enough for you to give it, till then, obe- "dience, not advice, is what I expect from "you. If I did not hold it beneath me to "ſhew reſentment to one ſo abſolutely ſub-

"ject

" ject to my power, you ſhould inſtantly " find the effect of this inſolence. But pre- " ſume not on that protection any farther, " as you regard your ſafety. No man pro- " vokes me with impunity."

" N—n—nor me!" (ſputtered the officer, whoſe temper, hot as that of the General was cool, caught fire at the fainteſt ſhadow of offence, and flamed almoſt to madneſs, as ſoon as rage permitted him to articulate a word) " Nor m—m—me. I ſeek no p—p— " protection but my ſword, with which I " will v—v—vindicate my own honour, " and make good what I ſay.——Talk to " m——m——me of ſafety, and im—p— " p—punity!"——

The affair now became ſerious, theſe words ſtriking at the General's ſafety, as well as his honour, and convincing him that, he muſt ſupport his dignity by a vigorous effort. " What!" (retorted he, therefore, with a tone and air of offended authority) " Do " you menace me too? I ſuppoſe you deſign " to raiſe a mutiny in the army, but I'll " prevent that."—Then turning to an officer who attended, " Take that madman away" (continued he) " and put him under a guard, " till he recovers his reaſon. Such behavi- " our muſt not go unpuniſh'd."—Then addreſſing himſelf to my maſter with an affected unconcern, as above being moved by what had happened, while the other was led

away ſpeechleſs and convulſed with rage, he politely invited him to dinner, an honour, however, which my maſter declined accepting that day, as he was moſt impatient to ſee his brother, who bore a principal command in the army under the General.

The meeting of theſe brothers was truely affecting. The inſtinctive connection of nature had been indiſſolubly cemented between them by the ſacred bond of friendſhip founded on a ſenſe of mutual virtue.

Actuated by the ſame principles they had both devoted themſelves to the profeſſion of arms, in the different ſervices of the land and ſea, as if to avoid the jealouſy of rivalſhip, each being determined to let no competitor take the lead of him in the road to honour.

Undebauched by affluence, and diſdaining to waſte his youth at home in luxury, when the cauſe of his country called for his aſſiſtance, the elder bravely came to ſeek for glory in theſe inhoſpitable wilds, with as much ardour as my maſter purſued it on his proper element, in order to earn honours which he might tranſmit to his own poſterity, equal to thoſe which his brother inherited from his illuſtrious anceſtors.

When the tender enquiries of affection were reciprocally anſwered, my maſter gratified the curioſity of his brother with a particular account of his late dearly bought ſuc-

ceſs, cloſing the black detail with ſome remarks on the different conduct of the General of this army, which were much to his advantage.

"Your reflections, my deareſt brother," (anſwered the officer) "are moſt juſt, as "things appear to you. But when you "have had an opportunity of ſeeing farther, "I fear you will find reaſon to change your "ſentiments, and that the *delay* here pro- "ceeds at bottom from the ſame principle "with the *precipitation*, which produced ſuch "terrible effects with you, and Heaven "grant it produce not as bad. Intereſt is "the object every where; and *whether that* "*is purſued by ſacrificing the forces in raſh and* "*ill-conducted attempts, to gain an immediate* "PRIZE, or *by letting them melt away in in-* "*action, to accumulate the* PROFITS *of com-* "*mand*, makes no difference in the end.

"I would not be underſtood from this to "juſtify the officer for arraigning the Ge- "neral's conduct, in ſo publick, and per- "ſonal a manner. Such ungoverned warmth "is inexcuſable. Proper reſpect muſt be "paid to thoſe who bear authority, or the "effect of that authority ceaſes; indeed it "is not to them, but to him who delegates "the authority, the reſpect is paid. A Ge- "neral at the head of an army repreſents "his Sovereign in the plenitude of his "power, and to ſuffer any ſlight to be

" ſhewn to his delegated character, were to
" betray the truſt of that delegation.

" For this reaſon, I think his puniſhment
" was neceſſary, and *therefore* juſt; I wiſh
" I could add that it was equally ſo from
" the injuſtice as from the circumſtances of
" the accuſation, which occaſioned it; but
" to any one who will not ſhut his eyes it
" muſt appear beyond a doubt, that his great
" crime was ſpeaking too much, and too
" plain truth; for with all our boaſted care
" for the preſervation of the men, their
" diſtreſſes are ſuch as have not left me a
" penny in my pocket, for I cannot ſhut
" my hand, where my heart is opened. In
" ſhort, I am ſo ſick of the whole ſcene, that
" I have ſollicited the command of a de-
" tached party, with which I hope to ſhew
" that the native bravery of *Britons*, when
" led with ſpirit, requires but little experi-
" ence to enable them to conquer more for-
" midable foes, than naked ſavages, led by
" a few wretched *Frenchmen*, in a condition
" not much better. I ſet out to-morrow
" morning, and think it a particular happi-
" neſs that you have arrived time enough
" for me to have this interview with you."

The reſt of their converſation is not ne-ceſſary to be repeated, as it turned upon their own domeſtick concerns. This much only it is but juſt for me to obſerve, that it ſhewed their conduct in the intercourſe and

relations of private life to be as amiable, as that in their publick capacities was exalted; and proved that moral virtue is the best foundation for true heroism.—My master's brother having in the course of their conversation intimated his having some present occasion for money, I here entered into his service.

You may judge that I remained not long in the possession of my new master. His brother had no sooner left him, than he paid me away, among a large number of my fellows, to a merchant for some additions, which he thought it necessary to make at his own expence to the provisions made by the publick, for the support and comfort of his men, through the fatigues and inconveniences of a campaign in an uninhabited country.

The sentiments expressed by my master, in the effusion of his soul to his brother, shewed his character in the justest light; I shall therefore only add, that as he acted from principles firmly established on the invariable basis of reason, there was no danger of his deviating from the path in which he set out.

So bright a prospect made it a pain to me to quit his service so suddenly; but I have since met many mortifications of the same kind, my stay being always shortest, in the best hands.

My

My continuance, though from another motive, was not much longer with my next maſter, the merchant, who in the common courſe of ſoliciting permiſſion for a ſhip of his to ſail with a cargoe, that muſt be ruined by delay, an embargoe having been laid on all the ſhipping in the place, in the unfathomable wiſdom of the ruling powers, to promote ſome unintelligible plan of ſervice, gave me to the General's clerk, from whom in the ſame courſe of buſineſs, I came into the ſervice of the General.

END OF THE FIRST BOOK.

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

BOOK THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL's *maſter makes ſome characteriſtick reflections. He is ſurprized at the officer's refuſing to make up matters; and gives a particular reaſon for ſome people's riſing in the world. An extraordinary perſonage enters to him. Deſcription of him. He gives a character of the native* AMERICANS; *and offers ſome intereſting remarks on the return they make to the treatment they meet with;*

and

and on the practice of forming in the closet, plans of operations for armies in the field. Odd reason why the AMERICANS *are desirous of gold.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.*

WHEN I entered into the possession of my new master, he was waiting in his tent, with the most anxious impatience, for the return of a person whom he had employed to mediate, as of himself, between him, and the officer, whose presumption in daring to find fault with his measures he had thought proper to punish in the manner I just now mentioned.

His reflections on an affair that struck so dangerously at his pride and avarice, the ruling passions of his heart, could not be very agreeable; but the sight of the money gave them a more pleasing turn. Having asked the clerk a few questions in the way of business, and dismissed him, he took the purse, and weighing it in his hand, "Aye!" (said he with delight glistening in his eyes) "this "will do. This embargoe was a lucky "thought. Let who will complain of the "hinderance it is to the business of the pub-"lick, it advances mine; and that is all I "care for. I came here to serve myself, "and not the publick; and as there is nei-"ther plunder nor contributions to be got "by activity, I must try what I can do ano-"ther way. I shewed my dexterity at hunt-

"ing

" ing Savages in the mountains of my own " country; and have no desire to renew the " chace here. It was necessary for me then " to do something that should make me " remarkable, and gain favour with those, " who I saw must prevail in the end, and " therefore I spared no trouble nor fatigue, " neither friend nor foe, to convince them " of my attachment; and in reward they " have now given me this command, in " conducting which I must use delay to reap " the advantages of my former activity. " *Fabius* saved *Rome* by delay; let me but " make my fortune by it, and I envy him " not his fame. I prefer this sound" (chinking the purse) " to the empty noise of pub- " lick acclamation, the shouts of a giddy " mob, who bless and curse with the same " breath, and without knowing why they " do either. No! no! this is the musick " that charms my ear."

His meditations were broken off here, by the gentleman he waited for, who informed him that the officer would come to no terms of accommodation; nor even accept of his liberty till he should be acquitted by a court-martial; and have justice done him for the affront offered to his honour.

Such an account was far from being agreeable to my master, who for obvious reasons wished to have every thing go on as quietly as possible. After some pause, " This is a

" damn'd

" damn'd affair," (ſaid he) " but we muſt " now e'en make the beſt we can of it. " Who could have thought that a country- " man of my own would have proved ſo " refractory. We have always been re- " markable for hanging well together. *One* " *and all* was the word, or we could never " have done ſuch great matters. If it is " once found out, that we can be divided, " we ſhall ſoon loſe our conſequence; and " every man be reduced to *the poor proſpect* " *of depending on his own merit.* However, " ſince he will not accept of his liberty " here, he ſhall e'en go home a priſoner, " and recover it there as well as he can. I " am of the right ſide; and don't fear but " my friends will bring me through more " than this; eſpecially as it is a national " concern to us all alike. In the mean time, " we muſt double our diligence to make hay " while the ſun ſhines."

The gentleman, who was in all his ſecrets, acknowledged the force of his reaſoning; and was going to communicate to him ſome new ſtrokes of management, when word was brought my maſter, that a perſon, to whom he could not properly be denied, deſired to ſee him.

There was ſomething in the whole appearance of this perſon that ſtruck me with the ſtrongeſt curioſity the moment I ſaw him. His ſtature, above the common ſize of man,

was form'd with the juſteſt proportion, and denoted ability to execute the moſt difficult attempts, which the determined and enterprizing ſpirit that animated his looks could urge him to. His open countenance, in which humanity and reaſon attempered reſolution, ſhew'd the genuine workings of his ſoul; and his whole deportment was in the unaffected eaſe of natural liberty, above the hypocritical formality of ſtudied rules of behaviour deviſed only to deceive.

As ſoon as he entered, "I am come, Sir," (ſaid he, throwing himſelf careleſsly into a chair, and cutting ſhort all that parade of ceremony, on the punctilious obſervation of which my maſter prided himſelf not a little) "to receive your orders. It is time, I "ſhould join my people, who grow impa- "tient, as the enemy have began to ſtir; and "I never chuſe to baulk their firſt ardour. "There is nothing like taking men in the "humour to fight; and before they have "time to conſider too much about it."

"I deſign, Sir," (anſwered my maſter, with a ſolemnity, and affectation of politeneſs, which made the ſtrongeſt contraſt to the blunt freedom of the other) "to call a "council of war very ſoon; at which I "ſhall be glad of your aſſiſtance, to form "a plan of operations for the campaign. "When that is done, and all proper mea- "ſures concerted, you ſhall ſet out. *Preci-*

"*pitation*

" *pitation* is very dangerous; and directly " contrary to the principles of the *regular* " *art of war*, by which I mean to proceed. " The Savages ſhall find ſome difference be- " tween my conduct, and that of my prede- " ceſſors. They ſhan't ſurprize me on my " march; nor draw me into an ambuſh, " among woods and mountains."

" As to the art of war, Sir," (replied the other) " I know no more of it, than what " Heaven and common ſenſe have taught " me, which is to find out the enemy, and " beat them as ſoon as I can, my plan for " which is always directed by preſent cir- " cumſtances; nor do I know how one can " be formed to effect, any other way."

" Your exploits have always been well " executed;" (returned my maſter with an air, and tone of importance, as deſigning to ſay ſomething that ſhould raiſe him in the opinion of the other) " But you have hi- " therto acted rather in the low ſphere of a " *partiſan*, than as a general. The duty of " a general comprehends much more than " what you mention, as you ſhall have an " opportunity of learning before we take " the field. I intend to go through a regu- " lar courſe of military operations to inſtruct " my officers, and diſcipline the men. Your " *Heaven-taught* generals may beat the ene- " my; but that is the leaſt part of the care " and duty of a general now a days. The " very leaſt part."——

" And

" And pray, Sir, how much time will " this courſe of operations take up ?"—

" I can not exactly ſay ; but not above a " month or two I imagine."——

" A month or two ! why, Sir, I hope we " ſhall have done the moſt troubleſome part " of our work by that time ; or elſe I do " not know what may be the conſequence. " For, to be plain with you, theſe delays " will never do with the *uncivilized Ameri-* " *cans*, who judge of things only by com- " mon ſenſe ; and cannot be made to com- " prehend this way of carrying on a war, " by lying ſtill in a camp and doing nothing. " They have formed very diſadvantageous " notions of the delays already made ; and " think a man who does not advance to " fight his enemy is afraid of him ; and " therefore if they are not led to action di- " rectly, they will deſert, ſo that if I ſtay " a month or two here at ſchool to learn a " leſſon I may never have occaſion for, I " muſt find other forces to put it in practice " with."——

" Cannot you deviſe any reaſon that may " account for your ſtaying, to their ſatisfac- " tion ?"——

" Really, Sir, not I! I never was good at " deviſing reaſons, deſtitute of truth, in my " life ; and have entirely forgot the practice " ſince I have converſed with the *Americans*, " who are far from being ſuch fools, as they

" are

" are too generally thought to be. Though " they have not the advantages of learning, " they ſee by the light of natural reaſon " through all the boaſted wiles of policy; " and as they never mean deceit themſelves, " deteſt it in others, however ſpeciouſly diſ- " guiſed; nor ever place confidence a ſecond " time, where it has been once abuſed."—

" How! the *Americans* never mean de- " ceit! Surely you muſt know better! they " are the moſt perfidious, deceitful Sava- " ges, that burthen the earth; and it would " be an advantage to the world, if the whole " race of them was exterminated."——

" Such of them as converſe much with " *civilized Europeans*, it is too true, learn " many things from them, which are a diſ- " grace to their own *Savage* nature, as you " call it. But I ſpeak of the general diſ- " poſition of the people. Treat them with " candour, probity, and tenderneſs; and they " will return them tenfold, in all their in- " tercourſe with you; as on the other hand, " they ſeldom fail to retort the contrary " treatment with ſevere uſury. Nor are " they to be blamed. In all their dealings " with the *Europeans*, they find themſelves " impoſed upon in the groſſeſt manner; in " a manner not fit to be practiſed even with " brutes. Their ſenſibility is quick, and " their paſſions ungoverned; perhaps ungo- " vernable: How then can it be wondered

" at,

" at, that they make returns in kind, when
" ever they find opportunity; and become
" the moſt dangerous enemies? Whereas if
" thoſe paſſions were attach'd by good treat-
" ment, they would be the moſt affectionate,
" ſteady, and careful friends. I ſpeak from
" experience. I treat them as rational crea-
" tures; and they behave as ſuch to me. I
" never deceive them; and they never de-
" ceive me. I do them all the good offices
" in my power; and they return them many-
" fold. In ſhort, I practiſe to them the be-
" haviour which I wiſh to meet from them,
" and am never diſappointed. All the evils
" which have been ſuffered from them have
" proceeded from the unhappy errour, of
" thinking ourſelves poſſeſſed of a ſuperi-
" ority over them, which nature, that is
" Heaven, has not given us. They are our
" fellow-creatures; and in general above our
" level, in the virtues which give real pre-
" heminence, however deſpicably we think
" of, and injuriouſly we treat them."——

" They are much obliged to your charac-
" ter of them at leaſt; whatever others may
" be. And pray, Sir, what is it you would
" have me do, to preſerve the good opi-
" nion of theſe moſt *virtuous people?*"——

" I preſume not, Sir, to ſay what is pro-
" per for you to do. All I deſire is that you
" will diſmiſs me directly, in a capacity of
" making good my promiſes to my friends;

" and

" and by the time you ſay you ſhall be " ready to move with the army, I hope to " give a good account of the enemy."—

" That, Sir, I have no thought of. How- " ever, as you are ſo deſirous of going, I " ſhall not delay you. I'll form a plan of " operations for you this very day."——

" For me, Sir? I do not underſtand you. " How can you know what will be proper, " or poſſible for me to do, at the diſtance " of many hundred miles, in a country you " are an utter ſtranger to. In *Europe*, where " war, like a game of cheſs, is *played*, as " I may ſay, entirely by art, that method " of planning in the cloſet the operations of " the field may do perhaps; but then it is " neceſſary that each ſide ſhould play the " game by the ſame rules. A body of " *Americans*, who know nothing of the art " of war but fighting, might be apt to " move ſo irregularly, as to diſconcert the " whole ſcheme of the *game*. Indeed, by " what I can judge of the matter, that very " method of planning the operations of a " campaign is advantageous only to the ge- " neral, as it prolongs the war, and conſe- " quently the emoluments of command, by " tying up his hand from availing himſelf " of any unforeſeen circumſtances, in his " favour. Whereas if armies were ſent out " only to fight, as formerly before the *im-* " *provements* in the art of war, the diſpute

" would

" would ſoon be decided, and even the van-
" quiſhed better off, than the victors are at
" preſent, whoſe riches and ſtrength are ſo
" exhauſted by this dilatory way of pro-
" ceeding, that they are not the better for
" their ſucceſs. I hope, Sir, you do not
" take offence at the plainneſs of my ſpeech. I
" have ſo long been accuſtomed to converſe
" with *Savages*, who ſpeak juſt what they
" think, that I am become quite a ſtranger
" to that *diſſimulation*, which is called *polite-*
" *neſs*, among *civilized* nations; and muſt
" make uſe of words, in their original in-
" tention of conveying my thoughts."—

" Not in the leaſt, Sir! I like your free
" manner much. It is in the character of
" a ſoldier. I will order every thing to be
" got ready for you directly; and you ſhall
" go as ſoon as you pleaſe, at full liberty to
" act as you ſee proper."——

" I hope, Sir, I ſhall not make a bad uſe
" of that liberty. And pray, among the
" other things, do not forget to order me
" ſome money."——

" Money, Sir! What occaſion can you
" poſſibly have for money, among *Savages*,
" who do not know the value of it?" ——

" Why really, Sir, that queſtion is na-
" tural. But the matter is, the *Savages* who
" come among the *Europeans* ſee every thing
" governed by gold, in ſuch a manner, that
" they have taken it into their heads, we

" worſhip it; and therefore are become as " eager for it as ourſelves, in hopes of gain- " ing an aſcendancy over us, when they " have got our god, in their poſſeſſion."

A conſcious heart takes to itſelf more than was ever meant. The dry manner in which this was ſaid touched my maſter to the quick, and made him not deſire to purſue the converſation any farther with ſuch a free ſpeaker, nor have ſo nice an obſerver longer about him, to pry into the motives of *his* actions. Giving him therefore the money he required, he wiſh'd him ſucceſs with a forced politeneſs, and diſmiſſed him to prepare for his departure.

It was a pleaſure to me to change my ſervice on this occaſion; as the idea I had *con*ceived of my new maſter, both from his appearance and converſation, promiſed me ſome variety, and my curioſity was heartily ſurfeited with the regular art of war.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

The manner in which CHRYSAL'*s maſter was received by his ſubjects. Antiquated principles on which his authority was founded. His odd opinions and conduct in ſome important matters, with the conſequences.*

AS ſoon as every thing was ready, my maſter ſet out for home, where he arrived without meeting any thing remarkable in his journey, as you may ſuppoſe, through uninhabited deſarts.

The reception he met with from his people was the very reverſe of what *Sovereigns* uſually meet. They welcomed him with ſincere joy and reſpect, which they expreſſed in the over-flowing of their hearts, without ceremony or parade: I ſay, "Sovereigns," as he really enjoyed that power in its moſt rational ſenſe, his will being a law to all around him, *becauſe they always found it juſt, and advantageous to them.*

Though the account which he gave my late maſter of his manner of treating his people ſhew'd a juſt foundation for his power over them, I found that it depended not on that alone. His authority, like that of the firſt rulers of the earth, was founded alſo on

the relations of nature, and ſupported by its ſtrongeſt ties, he being literally the father of his ſubjects, the king of his own family.

To explain this it is neceſſary to inform you, that on his fixing his reſidence among theſe *uncivilized* nations, in order to gain an influence over them the more readily, he had laid aſide all ſuch rules of conduct as ſeemed to him to be contradictory to natural reaſon, and the publick good, however forcibly enjoined for particular convenience.

Among theſe the chief was the cuſtom of reſtraining the commerce between the ſexes, and confining individuals to each other, after the deſire which firſt brought them together had ceaſed: As he ſaw that the ſtrongeſt paſſion which governs the human heart is that deſire, (for his philoſophy was not refined enough to ſuggeſt one thought of governing the paſſions) and as the continuation of the ſpecies depends entirely on the gratification of it, he held every oppoſition to it to be moſt criminal in itſelf, and detrimental to the publick good, (properly the firſt object of every civil inſtitution, and which can be promoted no way ſo effectually, as by promoting population) and therefore exerted all his influence to encourage that commerce, under ſuch reſtrictions only, as were evidently neceſſary to procure the great end of it, the propagation of the ſpecies. He gave liberty to every man to converſe with

as many females as he pleaſed; and to quit them whenever he thought proper, provided they were not pregnant. To the women the former liberty could not be extended, as the uſe of it would defeat the deſign; or, where it had not immediately that effect, cauſe confuſion, and prevent both paternal care, and filial duty, by the uncertainty of deſcent: But the latter inſtance they enjoyed equally with the men, being allowed to chuſe whom they liked, and if not pregnant quit them at pleaſure, for others, without reproach or ſhame, the off-ſpring of all which connections were to remain with the fathers.

I ſhall not ſay whether reaſon originally ſuggeſted this ſyſtem to him; or (as is often the caſe) whether he ſought for reaſons to ſupport the dictates of inclination. Be it which it would, the effect was the ſame. His ſubjects encreaſed in an uncommon degree; and he founded, like the patriarchs of old, an authority on the juſteſt of all principles, voluntary conſent, over a people inſeparably linked to him, and to each other, by the ſtrongeſt ties of nature, as being by this complicated commerce in the ſtricteſt ſenſe one family; for diſdaining to make laws for others, which he would not obſerve himſelf, (like too many of his brother legiſlators) he had enforced his precepts ſo powerfully by his example, that there was ſcarce an houſe in any of the tribes around him, from which he

had not taken a temporary mate, and added a child of his to their number.

That his reception, as I have observed, ſhould be moſt cordial from ſuch ſubjects is not to be wondered at. They flocked about him on his arrival, and hailing him with one voice by every tender relation of nature, brother, father, ſon, huſband, ſhewed an affection too ſublime to be expreſſed by formal rules, and impoſſible to be ſeen without ſympathizing in it.

When this tribute was paid to nature, he called the elders of the people together, and diſtributing among them the preſents which he had received for that purpoſe, gave them an account of the mighty army ſent by his Sovereign againſt the enemy, and propoſed to them to aſſiſt its operations.

There required not many arguments to confirm their confidence, in one who had never deceived them. They readily and ſincerely aſſented to his propoſal, and ſending to invite all their neighbours to join them, ſeparated to make the very little preparations neceſſary for perſons who were ſtrangers to luxury, and knew no wants but thoſe of nature.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

CHRYSAL describes his master's habitation and family. He makes an uncommon progress. The manner in which he found the females of his household engaged. Remarks on FINERY. *Account of their amusements, with the manner in which they usually ended. The method by which* CHRYSAL's *master kept peace in his family.*

AS soon as my master had thus concluded the business of his publick character, he retired to devote a few minutes to his domestick concerns.

His habitation was built on an eminence by the side of a rivulet, the banks of which were covered with a number of neat little cottages, inhabited by the females of his present family; for instead of attempting to prevent their quitting him for other men, as inclination led them, he not only always dismissed them with presents in the most friendly manner, but also kept up an intercourse of regard with them and their successive husbands, every one of whom he attached to himself in the strongest manner, being particularly ready on all occasions to do them every good office in his power.

In theſe cottages they bred up their children, and enjoyed from his care, all the neceſſaries of life with more convenience and comfort than they could poſſibly have experienced among their own people, unimbittered by any of thoſe jealouſies and feuds which ſuch a ſituation might ſeem to threaten, ſo equally did he diſpenſe his favours among them.

When he had given ſome orders in his houſe, he walked out to viſit his family, and enjoy the ſublimeſt inſtance of the happineſs of power, in making all who were ſubject to it happy, by the unaffected tenderneſs with which he enquired after their welfare, and returned their careſſes, on his entering every cottage.

The appearance of theſe females was moſt different from the delicate ſenſibility that ſoftened the beauties of * *Amelia*, the fire which animated the charms of *Olivia*; but cuſtom, that reconciles all things, had made them agreeable to him, eſpecially as no compariſon could there be made to their diſadvantage; and the honeſt readineſs with which they met his addreſſes, the warmth with which they ſhared his joy, amply over ballanced any imaginary defect in feature or complexion; any ignorance of thoſe affected arts of coyneſs, which overacted often pall the taſte for long expected pleaſure.

* *See Vol.* I.—*Page* 20.

As

As his women did not expect his viſit ſo ſoon, he found them engaged, according to their different inclinations, either in the management of their domeſtic œconomy, or in ſuch amuſements as cuſtom had made pleaſing to them. The occupations of the former kind were neceſſarily confined within a narrow circle, from the circumſtances of their lives; but in the latter, fancy, ſole ſovereign of the ſcene, aſſerted her unbounded rule, and ſported in variety of forms, many of which I ſoon had an opportunity of ſeeing.

As my maſter proceeded in his patriarchal progreſs, he met a conſiderable number of the females of his family, with ſuch of the neighbouring men, as from age or idleneſs were unfit for more uſeful employments, aſſembled together under a ſpreading tree, that grew before the door of one of their cottages, dreſſed out in their gayeſt apparel, and engaged in different kinds of diverſions. At the ſight of him they all aroſe, and would have deſiſted, but he prevented them, and not only made them reſume their ſports, but alſo ſat down himſelf, in the midſt of the company, to be a ſpectator of them.

It ſeems it was a cuſtom among them to meet frequently thus at each other's cottages, for the pleaſure of enjoying their favourite amuſements to more advantage together, and diſplaying their *finery*, to ſet off which, no art nor care was neglected on theſe occa-

ſions. They dreſſed themſelves in their beſt blankets, which were covered all over with patches of various colours to make them look more gawdy. Their heads were adorned with plumes of feathers. Strings of glaſs-beads were rolled around their arms and legs. Their toes were loaded with rings of pewter and braſs; and their necks and faces were carved with figures of birds and flowers, and painted of various hues.

I ſee your laughter moved at this deſcription; but that proceeds from narrow prejudice, and want of rational reflection, on which it would appear that all uſeleſs ornaments are equally juſt objects of ridicule, whether made of ſilks, and laces, or parti-coloured rags; whether bits of glaſs, or pearls and diamonds. Think, I ſay, but for a moment; and you will ſee that in reality there is nothing more abſurd in wearing one kind of metal, or upon one part of the body, than another, *rings of braſs*, for inſtance, *on the toes*, than *golden on the fingers*; in *carving the ſkin*, than *boring the ears*; or *in painting the face blue and green*, than *white* and *red*: The ſame vanity is the motive of all, and all produce the ſame effect of admiration; as in things equally unſupported by reaſon, cuſtom and caprice bear equal ſway. The difference in the means therefore makes none in the end; at leaſt none to the diſadvantage of the perſons of whom I

ſpeak,

ſpeak, as it certainly is more abſurd to laviſh treaſures, that might be ſo much better employed, to a worthleſs purpoſe which cheaper bawbles would anſwer as well.

The amuſements, in which they were engaged, were as whimſical as their dreſſes. Some ſkipped about, deſcribing various figures in their motions, till want of breath and wearineſs obliged them to ſit down. Others, and theſe the greateſt number, were employed in chucking ſhells or pebbles from the brook, into holes dug in the ſand, for prizes of bits of tin, or braſs, which game they applied themſelves to with the greateſt eagerneſs and anxiety, and many were ſo expert at, as to ſtrip their antagoniſts of all their hoards, often indeed not without the aſſiſtance of chicanery and deceit: And a few of the eldeſt, and theſe who had nothing to ſtake at play, gathered up and down into little ſets, and entertained themſelves with making remarks upon the reſt, not always dictated by good-nature or truth; while the miſtreſs of the cottage buſied herſelf in adjuſting ceremonials, ſettling her company at their ſeveral amuſements, and ſerving them with milk, or broth, and tobacco, the fatigue of which office ſhe never repined at, as her conſequence was eſtabliſhed by the number of her gueſts.

Though meer amuſement was the obvious end of theſe meetings, other objects were generally purſued, and other conſequences

produced by them. Intrigues were commenced, and often compleated; and trifling as the prizes were, for which they contended, emulation and avarice agitated the paſſions, and ſet the competitors together by the ears, till they almoſt clawed out each other's eyes.

Their ſports were at length beginning to take their uſual turn. The tempers of the loſers became ſoured; and the detection of ſome *deep* ſtrokes of play gave riſe to altercations, which would ſoon have been followed by blows; but my maſter interpoſed his authority, and put an end to their diſputes, when the party broke up; ſome retiring to keep the aſſignations they had made in the warmth of their inclinations, and the reſt to calculate their winnings, or deviſe ſchemes for retrieving their loſſes, at their next meeting; and my maſter having ſingled out the happy favourite of that night, repaired with her to his own habitation, without any of the reſt taking offence, or even particular notice of the preference, as they had it in their power to ſupply their loſs elſewhere.

I have obſerved your aſtoniſhment at this whole ſcene, eſpecially at my maſter's hardineſs in expecting to be happy among a number of women, and attempting to keep them in order together, when one, in your opinion, is more than any man can manage; but what will it be, when I tell you that that number often amounted to hundreds; and that he never

never had recourſe to any kind of ſeverity, in his conduct to them?

To comprehend this, it is neceſſary for you to conſider, that moſt of, if not all the uneaſineſſes which imbitter the life of man ariſe from an officious intruſion into the uneaſineſſes of others, or an over-weening partiality to himſelf, that makes him expect treatment, which he does not give, and take offence where none is meant him, for matters not worth his being offended at; an obſervation that will hold in every ſtate, publick and private; among *governours*, as well as *governed*.

His rule then was never to take part in their diſputes among themſelves, nor offence at their infidelity to his bed, of which he himſelf ſet them the example. This diſarmed them of that *perverſeneſs, which is the ſex's moſt offenſive weapon.* They remained conſtant to him, becauſe they were not reſtrained from being otherwiſe, whenever they pleaſed; nor did they trouble him with their diſputes, becauſe they ſaw he would not be troubled at them.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

CHRYSAL's master is honourably rewarded for his services. An unexpected meeting with one of his country-women, introduces an uncommon remark on a common matter. The lady gives an odd instance of conjugal love; and refuses the civil offer of CHRYSAL's *master, for a natural reason.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.*

THE very next morning his people assembled before his door, in readiness to obey his commands, when he led them directly in quest of the enemy, sharing himself in all their fatigues, and teaching them to despise danger by his example, so little did he know of the duty of a general.

It would be tiresome to enter into a particular description of an expedition, carried on among wildernesses, and desarts, and consisting chiefly of ambuscades, and surprizes. It is sufficient to say that he was successful in all his enterprizes, reason and presence of mind serving him instead of experience, in the regular art of war; and courage well supplying the place of discipline in his men.

Such services could not miss of reward from a just, and judicious Sovereign. His power

power was inlarged; and he received those marks of favour and distinction, which were originally instituted to excite virtuous emulation, and set the seal of honour on successful merit; though like most other human institutions, they too often produce the contrary effect, and reflect only disgrace, from being bestowed contrary to their intention, and on unworthy objects.

As he was preparing the way thus for the motions of the main army, whenever the general should think proper to let it move, some of his people brought before him an *European* lady, whom they found wandering in those unfrequented wilds, her guide having mistaken his way.

Such a situation necessarily entitled her to his compassion and assistance; but he soon felt himself still farther interested in her favour, when he found she was a native of his own country, and of a family not entirely unknown to him, before he came to fix his abode in this distant part of the world.

There is not a stronger instance of the force of that attachment, called in a larger sense *patriotism*, than the instinctive affection which persons of the same country, though utterly unacquainted before, feel for each other the moment they meet in a strange place. My master instantly called her his dear country-woman, and embracing her with the tenderness of a brother, led her away to his own

own tent, which he reſigned to her, as the beſt accommodation he could give her; and then went and ordered every thing that had belonged to her, which his men looking upon as fair prize had taken and divided among themſelves, to be reſtored, promiſing to recompenſe the captors himſelf.

As ſoon as ſhe had adjuſted her appearance, in ſome better manner, ſhe ſent to deſire my maſter's company, for he had told her that he ſhould not come without permiſſion, for fear of intruding improperly upon her; and on his expreſſing wonder what could have brought her thus into the midſt of thoſe deſarts ſo far away from every *European* ſettlement, ſhe gratified his curioſity with the following account, which was often interrupted by ſighs, tears, and every expreſſion of the moſt poignant grief.

Her huſband, (ſhe ſaid) who had been an officer of diſtinguiſhed rank in the *Engliſh* forces, had fallen in one of the defeats they ſuffered in the beginning of the war, before *England* had exerted herſelf in ſuch a manner, as to intitle her to ſucceſs; the news of whoſe death affected her ſo extraordinarily, that ſhe reſolved to brave all the fatigues and dangers of ſo long a voyage by ſea, and journey through uninhabited deſarts in time of war, for the melancholy pleaſure of one laſt view of his dear remains, which ſhe had accordingly obtained, though not

not ſo much to her ſatisfaction as ſhe could have wiſhed, the body being in a ſtate of putrefaction, not poſſible to be approached without diſguſt and abhorrence; nor to be diſtinguiſhed from any other maſs of corruption, when ſhe had cauſed it to be dug out of the grave, in which it had been buried on the ſpot where he had been killed, among the other victims of the day; and was now returning home, when ſhe had happily been found by his people.

Though my maſter was as much unverſed in the regular rules of politeneſs, as of war, good-nature taught him the eſſentials of one, as reaſon had of the other. He heard out her ſtory, though not without pity and contempt at the extravagance and folly of it; and conſoling her with ſome general remarks on the error of indulging immoderate grief, for things not to be remedied, offered to ſend her under a ſufficient eſcort to his own habitation, where ſhe might remain in ſafety, and have the converſation and attendance of his women, till the concluſion of the campaign, when he would convey her himſelf to the next ſea-port, in order to her returning to her own country.

Though ſhe would have looked upon any attempt to conſole her, as the higheſt affront, in another ſituation, her preſent circumſtances made her think it not proper to ſhew any reſentment of it to him: beſide, there was

ſomething

ſomething in his appearance, that ſome how made it leſs diſagreeable from him, than it would have been from any other perſon; and would poſſibly have influenced her to accept of his offer, had not the mention of *his women* alarmed her delicacy, and ſet her virtue on its guard.

Reſolving therefore to have this cleared up, before ſhe would give any direct anſwer to his offer, ſhe expreſſed her high ſenſe of his kindneſs in the politeſt terms; and entering into a general converſation, among other queſtions of meer curioſity, aſked him in a careleſs manner, whom he meant by *his women*, and in what capacity they ſerved him?

Such a queſtion was more than he deſired, though he had inconſiderately laid himſelf open to it. However, as he thought no delicacy could juſtify deceit, he anſwered her directly and without preface, that they ſerved him in the natural capacity of women, while they pleaſed to continue with him; nor did he deſire any other ſervice from them.

Though ſhe was a good deal diſconcerted at this anſwer, ſhe bad the addreſs not to ſeem to underſtand it, in hopes that he would take the hint, and explain himſelf into a meaning leſs offenſive to her modeſty; to give him an opportunity for which, "I preſume, Sir," (replied ſhe) "you mean that they wait upon your lady, or perform the other domeſtick

offices

offices of your family, in which women ſervants only are employed?"

"No really, madam, (anſwered he) that "was not my meaning. I have no lady for "them to wait upon; nor do they live ſo "immediately in my own family, as to "have any domeſtic employment in it."

"How, Sir! Are you not married?"

"Not particularly to any one perſon, ma-"dam."

—"That's very ſtrange!" (ſaid ſhe, pleaſed at having gained ſo material a piece of intelligence, and reſolving to purſue the converſation.) "That is really very ſtrange. "And pray, Sir, are theſe ladies *Europeans?* "I ſuppoſe" (ſighing heavily and wiping her eyes) "they are the unhappy widows of "ſuch officers as have fallen in the ſervice, "to whom you have ſhewn the ſame polite-"neſs and humanity, as I now experience "from you."

"I am ſorry, madam," (anſwered he, to ſatisfy her curioſity at once, and put a ſtop to queſtions which began to be troubleſome) "to be obliged to undeceive you in an opi-"nion ſo favourable to me; they are all native "*Americans*, by whom I have had children; "and in whoſe unfeigned affection, and eaſy "complying tempers I find ſuch ſatisfac-"tion, that I never ſhall quit them to attach "myſelf ſolely to any one woman, however "ſuperior to them in the advantages of

"beauty

" beauty and education; not, indeed, that " they want qualifications to raiſe both love " and eſteem, as you will find when you " have been ſome time among them."

This, which was too plain for her to affect not to underſtand it, inſtantly put an end to the pleaſure ſhe had began to find in his converſation, and determined her as to his propoſal. " I am much obliged to you for your *civil* " offer, Sir," (ſaid ſhe, bridling up her chin, and making him a formal courteſie) " *but* " I can not accept of it. I have not the " leaſt deſire for the converſation of *Squaws*, " and am in haſte to leave this ſavage place; " for which reaſon I ſhall take it as a fa- " vour, if you will ſend ſome of your " people to guard me to the next *Engliſh* " ſettlement to-morrow morning. At pre- " ſent I am quite exhauſted with fatigue, " and want ſome reſt, if the diſtreſs of my " heart will permit me to take any."

This thought recalled the remembrance of her loſs: She burſt into a flood of tears; and my maſter withdrew, after finding that his attempts to conſole her, only aggravated her grief, and gave offence to her delicacy.

Unvers'd as he was in the ways of the polite world, he was too well acquainted with the ruling principles of the ſex, which in every ſtate are the ſame, not to ſee through this change in her behaviour; but the diſcovery had no other effect, than to confirm him

him in his contempt for ſuch hypocritical levity. Accordingly, finding ſhe continued in the ſame mind next morning, he made the beſt proviſion he could for her journey, and ſent her away with a ſufficient guard, forcing upon her a purſe of gold, *(in which I was)* to defray any accidental expence, for which ſhe might be unprovided, in caſe ſhe ſhould not directly meet a ſhip ready to carry her to *Europe*.

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL'S *miſtreſs gives ſome ſtriking inſtances of female conſiſtency. She is cured of her grief, by a perſon of accompliſhments as extraordinary as her own. The advantage of comparative excellence.* CHRYSAL'S *miſtreſs marries, and he changes his ſervice, for that of an old maſter.*

AS ſoon as my miſtreſs found herſelf out of ſight of my late maſter, ſhe gave vent to that indignation and rage of diſappointment, which ſhe had thought proper to ſuppreſs, while in his preſence. "Inſenſible brute!" (ſaid ſhe) "Not quit his "odious *Squaws* for any woman! And to "have the rudeneſs to tell me ſo to my face!

"It

" It shews his gross, low taste, for which *such* " animals are fittest."——

Then pausing for some moments; " What " a charming figure!" (continued she, sighing softly) " Such a size! Such strength " and ease in every motion! And then the " manly beauty in his looks! Had I but the " polishing of him! I was too hasty. I " should have waited to insinuate my- " self into his heart by degrees. I could " not have failed of success. My husband " was as strongly attached to another when " first I undertook him. Oh! dearest, best " of men! Never shall I meet your fellow! " Never shall another possess your place in " this faithful, wretched heart."——

A flood of tears here interrupted her meditations, which were often renewed in the same strain during her journey, and always ended the same way.

On her arrival at the sea-port, she had the mortification to find that she must wait some time for a passage home, all the ships which were there, having sailed a few days before.

But her vexation at this disappointment was considerably lightened by the conversation of several companions in it, particularly that of a chaplain of a regiment, who had taken such offence at the immorality of the army, and the uncomfortable way of living in those savage countries, that he had hired a substitute, at a cheap rate, to do his duty, and

was

was returning home to enjoy a life more agreeable to the delicacy of his character and inclinations, and exert his talents to more advantage in paying court to his patrons, than in reforming ſoldiers or converting ſavages.

Extreams are never laſting: The violence of my miſtreſs's grief had been too much for nature to ſupport, and was beginning to abate of itſelf, when my late maſter awoke another paſſion, that would ſoon have ſupplanted it; and though he did not purſue his advantage, as far as he might have done, he had opened her heart, and inſpired a warmth ready to receive any other impreſſion.

As the chaplain's function, and her rank, not to omit the accompliſhments of both, ſeemed to point them to each other as the moſt proper companions, it was not ſtrange that they ſhould ſoon grow intimate, nor that their intimacy ſhould be inſenſibly improved into a tenderer paſſion. They made *tete a tete* parties, at games which no one elſe in the place knew how to play with them. They talked of all the places of pleaſurable reſort in England, and of the amuſements purſued at them: And they raiſed their own conſequence in the eyes of each other, by boaſting of acquaintances with perſons they knew only by name.

Such

Such uncommon accompliſhments were not without effect. Each took the tales of the other upon credit, becauſe their own met the ſame complaiſance, and found a pleaſure in being deceived, by one whom it was an equal pleaſure to deceive.

But this was not the only thing that advanced their mutual influence upon each other. All human excellence is but comparative. Though far from being beautiful, they were the neareſt to being ſo; though far from being well-bred, they knew moſt of the common ceremonies in which good-breeding is by many thought to conſiſt, but which really are the incumbrances of it, of any perſons there; and conſequently appeared to enjoy thoſe advantages in the higheſt degree. They regulated the aſſemblies, they laid down the rules of play, they made faſhions; in a word, their opinion was the law in every matter of polite amuſement and concern.

Thus *cut out* for each other, it was impoſſible for this accompliſhed pair not to come together. They were accordingly married, not more to the grief of their reſpective admirers, than the joy of their rivals, the bride forgetting her grief for a dead, in the arms of a living huſband, and the happy bridegroom pleaſing himſelf with the thought that the high accompliſhments of his lady would encreaſe his intereſt with his noble patrons.

To

To crown their happineſs, in a few days after they were married an *Engliſh* man of war put in there, in its way home, the captain of which politely offered them their paſſage. Such an opportunity was not to be miſſed: They accepted his offer with the greateſt joy, and in return made a *party* and entertainment for him, when he won *me* from my miſtreſs at a game of *brag*, the only game indeed at which he thought himſelf a match for her.

Though I had no reaſon to regret leaving her ſervice, my preſent change gave me no great pleaſure as it wanted even the recommendation of novelty, my new maſter being the captain, with whom I had left the *Spaniſh* coaſt, who had at length been made ſo happy, as to be ordered home.

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* ENGLAND. *His maſter is ſaluted by a ſight not very pleaſing. The hiſtory of the unfortunate hero of the day opens ſome myſterious ſcenes.* THE OBVIOUS USE OF COUNCILS OF WAR.

(CHRYSAL's *maſter having in the courſe of his voyage home given offence to his officers, by his prudential regard to his own ſafety; to obviate any bad conſequences which might attend their complaining to his ſuperiours, he reſolved to employ* CHRYSAL's *mediation in his favour, as ſoon as he ſhould arrive in* ENGLAND.—*Vol.* I. *Page* 57.)

His arrival in *England* preſented him with a ſcene, that confirmed this reſolution, and made him wiſh he had not been in ſuch haſte to return. On his entering the harbour, he found the boats of all the men of war there drawn up around one ſhip, in which was diſplayed the dreadful ſignal of the execution of the commander. The ſight appalled his ſoul, conſcience anticipating the ſtroke of juſtice, and taking this as an omen of his own fate.

He had not time to brood over theſe gloomy reflections long, when an officer came on

on board him, with an order to attend the execution in his boat, along with the other captains, which he obeyed, in a ſtate of mind, ſcarce leſs unhappy, than that of the criminal.

As ſoon as the bloody work was done, he waited on the chief commander, where the melancholy, in every face he met, was far from relieving the anxiety of his mind. He could have no pleaſure in ſuch company. When he had anſwered a few general queſtions of courſe, he went away to the ſhip of a captain of his intimate acquaintance, to learn ſome account of this ſhocking ſcene, for he had not had reſolution to make any enquiry about it; nor even to attend to the converſation of every one around him, which would have explained the whole.

After mutual congratulations on their meeting, my maſter ſignified his curioſity, which his friend promiſed to gratify *over their bottle*, as ſoon as they ſhould be alone after dinner.

Accordingly, when *the coaſt was clear*, "You deſire information in an affair (ſaid "he) that has given our chore the deepeſt "wound we have ever received. The cir-"cumſtances are many, and myſterious; "but I will ſtrive to give you a notion of "it in as few words as poſſible, for it can be "no pleaſure to either of us to dwell upon "ſuch a ſubject.

" In the beginning of the war, ſoon after " you went to *America*, the unfortunate man, " who has this day fallen a ſacrifice to the " humour of the times, was ſent out with " a fleet to counteract the ſchemes of the " enemy, and relieve a fortreſs of ours which " they were then beſieging. (This was the " purport of his *publick orders*; but it will ap- " pear to you preſently, that he muſt have " received *private* ones, of a very different " nature, from thoſe who at that time had " the conduct of affairs.)

" Inſtead of making the expedition ne- " ceſſary to have carried his orders into exe- " cution with effect, he trifled away the " time here, in ſuch a ſhameful manner, " uſing every frivolous excuſe he could de- " viſe to delay his departure, that the voice " of the publick was raiſed againſt him; " and it was found neceſſary to appoint ano- " ther to the command in his place in order " to ſilence their clamours; but unfortun- " ately for him, he ſailed the very day be- " fore his appointed ſucceſſor was to have ſet " out to ſuperſede him.

" The ſame dilatory conduct threw a " damp upon every thing he attempted to " do. He ſeemed reſolved upon nothing; " but though he was inveſted with the ful- " leſt powers to act as he ſaw proper him- " ſelf, called councils of war to deliberate " upon every the moſt trifling occaſion, that

" he

" he might have the ſanction of their ad-
" vice to excuſe his neglect, and often di-
" rect diſobedience of his orders; for you
" well know, that *a council of war always*
" *ſpeaks the ſenſe of the commander.*

" One inſtance of his proceeding in this
" manner will be ſufficient to juſtify this re-
" mark. He had been ordered to call at
" another fortreſs in his way, and take from
" thence a reinforcement for the garriſon of
" that which he was ſent to relieve: On
" his arrival there, inſtead of demanding
" that reinforcement peremptorily, as his
" orders impowered him, and making the
" expedition, which the urgency of the oc-
" caſion required, he ſhewed ſuch indiffer-
" ence to the enterprize by his delays, and
" expreſſed ſuch diffidence of his ſucceſs,
" that the commanding officer took the
" alarm; and following his example, called
" a council of war to conſider whether he
" ſhould ſend it, which on mature deliber-
" tion he abſolutely refuſed, on account of
" the danger of weakening his own garriſon,
" in caſe it ſhould be attacked; whereas, it
" was notorious that could never happen, if
" this unhappy man did his duty, as the
" force he had was ſufficient to keep the
" command of the ſea, and prevent any
" ſuch attempt. But far from urging this
" he quietly acquieſced in the officer's ex-
" cuſe, and ſailed away without the rein-

" forcement, for which alone he had been
" ordered to ſtop there.

" On the ſame principles, when at length
" he came in ſight of the place, the ſiege of
" which was puſhed with the greateſt vi-
" gour, he excuſed his ſending any relief to
" it, on a pretence of the danger of enter-
" ing the harbour, as if any military opera-
" tions could be free from danger, and ſail-
" ed away to ſeek a fleet of the enemies,
" which was coming to aſſiſt the ſiege, and
" which he came up with ſooner than he
" wiſhed.

" An engagement now was unavoidable;
" but, ſtill he had it in his power to prevent
" any effect from it, which he notoriouſly
" did, by trifling away his time in vain un-
" neceſſary *manœuvres*, and pretending to
" come to action at a diſtance too great for
" him to do any thing.

" The enemy, whoſe intereſt it was to
" avoid an engagement, in which their
" moſt ſanguine hopes could not promiſe
" them ſucceſs, availed themſelves of this
" conduct, and made their eſcape, after
" having, from the ſuperiority which his
" *keeping aloof* in this manner gave them,
" treated very roughly a part of his fleet
" that had advanced with leſs caution, and
" come really to action.

" This ſerved him as a pretence for call-
" ing a council of war next day, by the

" advice

" advice of which inſtead of purſuing the
" enemy, who had evidently fled from him,
" or making any attempt to relieve the for-
" treſs which was beſieged, obviouſly the
" firſt object of his being ſent out, he re-
" turned directly to the other, from which
" he was to have taken the reinforcement,
" as I mentioned before, to defend that from
" the danger brought upon it ſolely by his
" own conduct, leaving the former, depriv-
" ed thus of every proſpect of relief, to
" take its fate; and giving up the honour
" of his country by flying from an enemy,
" whom he might have vanquiſhed, and who
" had fled from him before.

CHAP. VII.

Continued. Conſequence of the foregoing conduct. An extraordinary ſentence attempted to be reverſed in an extraordinary manner, and by as extraordinary perſons. The reaſon of this; and why it miſcarried. More myſteries. Juſt fate of the BUNGLERS, *who left their poor* TOOL *in the lurch; with the conſequences of this affair to a certain chore.*

" THE conſequence of ſo ſtrange a
" conduct was, the nation took fire;
" and with one voice demanded ſatisfaction

" for ſuch a ſacrifice of their intereſt, and " honour. He was therefore not only de- " prived of his command, but alſo ſent " home a priſoner; and after ſuffering every " indignity and abuſe which the rage of a " licentious populace broken looſe from all " bounds could ſuggeſt, brought to his trial, " found guilty of *neglecting to do all in his* " *power to deſtroy the enemy*, and for that " crime has this day ſuffered the ſentence of " the law; a ſentence not more unexpect- " ed by him, and extraordinary in itſelf, " than in the manner it was paſſed; and " afterwards attempted to be reverſed, by " thoſe who had paſſed it, when they reflec- " ted on the danger of eſtabliſhing a prece- " dent, that might one day come home to " themſelves.

" For perſwaded (perhaps by their know- " ledge of the true motives of his conduct) " that nothing more was meant by the trial, " than to amuſe the publick, they reſolved " to act their parts in the farce, and found " him guilty, as I have ſaid, of ſuch a part " only of the charge againſt him, as com- " mon ſenſe could never conceive puniſh- " able with death, it being impoſſible to ac- " quit him abſolutely of the whole, with- " out involving themſelves in his guilt, by " which means, they expected to ſave both his " life, and their own credit. But ſuch *trim-* " *ming* ſeldom anſwers; *the tables were now*

" *turned*

" *turned*; and it was reſolved to carry even " this lame ſentence into execution, with the " utmoſt ſeverity.

" Alarmed at a meaſure, ſo contrary to " their expectations, his judges were driven to " their wit's end; and from a provident re- " gard to *themſelves* left nothing unattempt- " ed to ſave *him*. They retracted, as far " as was in their power, their own judge- " ment! they petitioned the miniſtry! they " applied to the whole body of the legiſla- " ture. They prayed! they expoſtulated! " they wept! but all was in vain. His fate " was determined; and they only drew upon " themſelves that contempt, which ſuch in- " conſiſtency deſerved.

" From this general account of his con- " duct it muſt have appeared to you, that " he acted by *ſecret* orders, directly oppoſite " to his *publick* ones, as no man however " proſtituted in principle, however infatu- " ated by fear, (neither of which, it was " well known, was his caſe) could otherwiſe " poſſibly have acted in ſuch a manner, the " inevitable conſequences of which were diſ- " grace and death. But if any doubt ſhould " remain on your mind, from the inconſi- " ſtancy of man's actions at different times, " the leaſt attention to the following cir- " cumſtances will effectually remove it.

" Repeated informations of the enemies " deſign upon that place had been ſent to

" thoſe in power, for a conſiderable time
" before; but no notice was taken of them
" to reinforce the garriſon; or even order
" the officers, regularly belonging to it, to
" attend their duty, till the ſiege was actu-
" ally begun; when this unfortunate man
" was ſent, but ſo late, that the common im-
" pediments of contrary winds might very
" poſſibly have delayed him ſo long as to
" defeat the deſign of his going, even had
" he exerted himſelf with the greateſt ar-
" dour.

" Had it alſo been really intended that he
" ſhould reinforce the garriſon, a force pro-
" per for that purpoſe would have been ſent
" directly from home, without ſubjecting
" him to the further delay of ſtopping for
" it at another place, where it might not be
" to be ſpared, as proved to be the caſe.

" And laſtly, had he not had ſecret rea-
" ſons, which he thought ſufficient to juſtify
" his conduct, it is not to be imagined that
" he would have waſted the time before he
" ſailed; that he would have accepted the
" refuſal of the commanding officer of the
" fortreſs, from which he was to have taken
" the reinforcement; that he would not
" have attempted at leaſt to throw ſome re-
" lief into the place; and that he would
" not have fought the enemies fleet, when
" he had the faireſt proſpect of defeating
" it, for the tenour of his former life ac-

" quitted

" quitted him as I have obſerved, of all
" ſuſpicion of cowardice, or traiterous cor-
" reſpondence with the foes of his coun-
" try.

" His conduct at, and after his trial con-
" firmed theſe remarks. Depending on ſup-
" port, from thoſe in power, he neglected
" the only meaſure, prudence could have
" ſuggeſted for his defence, which was to
" have retorted the charge of his miſcarriage
" upon his very accuſers, and perplexed the
" cauſe with ſuch a variety of matter about
" *diſobedience to ſignals, and breach of diſci-*
" *pline*, as to blind the world, and bewil-
" der his judges, ſo that they ſhould be
" glad to have acquitted him, if only to get
" rid of the plague of the enquiry; a me-
" thod, which experience had ſhewn to be
" effectual, in as flagrant a caſe as his. And
" even after he was condemned, his beha-
" viour proved that he expected a pardon
" to the laſt moment, for a crime which he
" had committed in obedience to their or-
" ders. Why he did not produce thoſe or-
" ders, in his vindication, muſt have been,
" that they were only *verbal* ones; which
" in the blind luſt of miniſterial confi-
" dence and favour, he had been weak
" enough to take.

" The reaſon of his being ſo baſely de-
" ſerted is too obvious. The adminiſtra-
" tion of thoſe, who had employed him,

" had been ſuch a ſeries of blunders, (not " to call it by a ſeverer name!) that they " had not only been ſupplanted by another " ſet, who promiſed better things; but were " alſo obliged to give him up, *as a ſin-of-* " *fering*, to the rage of the people; as pro- " tecting, or pardoning him would have " implied a participation of his guilt: And " in this light the other party viewed it ſo " ſtrongly, that they exerted all their ſtrength " to have ſaved him, in hopes of being able " by his means to gain a clue, to guide " them through ſome of thoſe labyrinths " of iniquitous and falſe policy, which they " ſuſpected, but could not otherwiſe detect, " to the entire overthrow of their rivals.

" This ſo abſolutely reverſed the whole " ſcene, that they who ſhould have ſupport- " ed, now found themſelves obliged to cruſh " him, in their own defence, which as it " was the moſt popular meaſure, they were " ſtill able to do.

" There is but one thing more neceſſary " for me to add; and that is the motive " for their giving him ſuch ſecret orders; " which, as far as reaſon can judge in ſuch " dark, confuſed myſteries, muſt have been " this.

" Provoked at the repeated inſults, and " injuſtice of the *French*, the miniſtry here " had precipitately plunged themſelves into " a war, without being prepared, or even

" deter-

" determined to purſue it; and then like a " parcel of children who have exhauſted all " their ſtrength, and reſolution, in one ſpite- " ful aſſault, ſtood in a ſtate of ſtupefac- " tion, utterly at a loſs how to proceed, or " retreat; till rouzed at length by the pre- " parations and menaces of the enemy, they " unluckily blundered in their fright upon " the wretched expedient of letting them take " this fortreſs, that for the recovery of it, " they might have a pretence for giving up to " them thoſe places about which the diſpute " begun; and ſo *botch up* a peace any way, " to get rid of a war, they found themſelves " unable to manage.

" The conſequence of this notable ſtroke " of policy was, the ſpirit of the people was " inflamed to ſuch a degree, by this diſ- " grace upon their arms, that they have " puſhed on the war with a reſolution, little " ſhort of madneſs; and the ſcheme, which " the miniſters had ſo wiſely laid for their " eſcape, only ſealed their ruin.

" This, my friend, is a ſhort but juſt " ſketch of this unfortunate affair, to which " I ſhall only add one circumſtance to prove " what I ſaid of his being *ſacrificed to the* " *humour of the times.* The officer who com- " manded in the fortreſs which was beſieg- " ed, and who in the defence of it had be- " trayed a want of every qualification ne- " ceſſary for ſuch an office, *but courage,*

" and

" and had even let that be over-ruled by the " inſtances of his officers, who were tired " of fatigues and dangers from which they " ſaw no proſpect of relief, to ſurrender it " at laſt, without any abſolute neceſſity, was " loaded with honours of every kind in re- " ward of a merit merely negative at beſt; " that is for not having done the very worſt " in his power, and ſurrendered it at firſt, " without making any defence.

" I have thus gratified your curioſity, in " the beſt manner in my power. If I have " made any miſtakes, they are not thoſe of " intention; but have proceeded from the " inability of reaſon to trace ſuch myſterious " actions to their real motives. One obſer- " vation though, I know, I can not be miſ- " taken in, which is that this affair has given " *a wound to our chore*, (as I obſerved be- " fore) *which it can never recover*. For after " ſuch an example, what officer, of any rank, " can expect to eſcape ſhould he neglect to " do his duty, in the fulleſt manner, how- " ever powerful his private motives to the " contrary may be?

" For my own part, I cannot ſay, it yet " affects me much. I am poor; and there- " fore muſt puſh. If I ever have the good " luck to be other, I know the conſequence; " and will rather quit the ſervice, than ha- " zard being ſhot, as I know muſt be any " man's fate, who ſhall hereafter be found

" to

"to fail in the performance of his duty, "from a prudential regard to the preserva- "tion of his life, or fortune; however great "that fortune, or powerful his family." "And so *here's to you, neck nor nothing* is "now the word."

The effect which this whole account had upon my master may be easily conceived. He *pledged* his friend though without naming *the toast*; and assenting to his remarks, by an heavy sigh, took his leave without saying a word.

CHAP. VIII.

Chrysal changes his service. He gets a view of a court of CIVIL JUDICATURE, *on an extraordinary occasion. Some reflections out of the common cant on the delays of the law. A whimsical application of an old story produces the strange effect of putting a counsellor out of countenance. The necessity of absolute power in some governments; with a common decision, by which nothing is decided.*

"AS soon as my master returned to his "ship, he took *me* from his purse, "once more, and looking earnestly at me, "for some moments, "We must part!" (said he, with a sigh) "we must part! but "I hope

" I hope to good purpoſe. *Thou* only waſt " the cauſe of that conduct, which now " gives me fear; exert therefore thy influ- " ence equally, where I now ſend thee; and " thou will excuſe my fault, if it is one.—

" Tears, at the thought of loſing me, " here choaked his utterance. He gave me " a laſt kiſs, and ſent me directly away, in " company with a conſiderable number more, " to mediate his peace.

" As the delicate nature of this tranſac- " tion required ſome addreſs, he entruſted " the management of it to his purſer who " had convinced him, by many inſtances, of " his ſagacity in the methods of obtaining " an influence over the great *."

My new maſter's road leading through a city, where a matter of great moment was under judicial determination, he waited for the event to gratify a natural curioſity.

The affair was this. A *fore-maſt-man* in a *guard-ſhip*, lying in one of the neighbouring harbours had by repeated miſbehaviour in going clandeſtinely on ſhore contrary to the expreſs orders of his captain, provoked him at length to give him *a dozen at the gang-way*, in order to terrify others from following his example.

Inſtead of being reclaimed by this puniſhment, the fellow perſiſted to miſbehave in ſuch a manner, that the captain, who was

* *Vol.* I.—*Page* 57—58.

remark-

remarkably humane in his diſpoſition, diſcharged him from the ſhip to avoid the pain of puniſhing him any more.

This was juſt what the wretch wanted. Accordingly he went directly to a proſtituted, *pettifoguing* attorney, who had before ſet him on the ſcheme; and employed him to ſue the captain at law, for an aſſault, in puniſhing him in the harbour, where he had no power ſo to do.

In a country governed by laws, they muſt regularly take their courſe, in every inſtance however flagrant in its particular circumſtances.

After all the preliminary delays of practice, which grievous as they may in ſome circumſtances be to an individual, are yet the ſafety of the publick, the affair was now brought to a legal deciſion. You are too well acquainted with *the forms of law* to require a minute account of all which were obſerved in this caſe. But there was one incident which I cannot paſs over.

As this was a matter that importantly concerned the intereſt of the navy, the rulers of it had ordered all the captains of the *guard ſhips*, in the harbour where it had happened, to attend the trial, in order to inform the court, in the uſages of their ſervice.

One of thoſe, who had never ſeen a court of *civil judicature* before, but was a man of natural good ſenſe, and ſome reading, having

ing liſtened to the unintelligible pleadings, and groſs exaggerations of *the council* on both ſides of the queſtion, eſpecially thoſe *hired* in the proſecution, till his patience was quite exhauſted, at length aroſe, and having obtained permiſſion from the judge to ſpeak, addreſſed himſelf to the court in theſe words.

" I am ſent here by thoſe, to whom the " King has entruſted the conduct of his " navy to explain the nature and rules of " our ſervice to this court, in caſe I ſee any " danger of their forming a wrong judg- " ment of it, from inexperience in a mat- " ter ſo much out of their way.

" The little gentleman yonder has ſpent " ſo much breath, and ſhewn ſuch great " reading on the ſubject, that I imagine it " is proper for me to make him ſome an- " ſwer, which I ſhall do in as few words as " poſſible, being not half ſo *long-winded*, as " he. But firſt I muſt beg leave to tell him " a ſtory, to conform to rule.

" I have read in a book, (for I perceive " that common-ſenſe ſignifies nothing here, " if not ſupported by a quotation, it mat- " ters not whether to the purpoſe, or not!) " that a certain Philoſopher having declaim- " ed one day for a conſiderable length of " time before *Alexander the Great*, at the " head of his army, on the duties of a gen- " eral, the Emperour turned about to *Par-* " *menio*, one of his generals who ſtood

" near

" near him, and aſked him, what he thought " of his ſpeech?—*Sire*, (anſwered *Parme-* " *nio*) my opinion is, that *I never heard a* " *fool talk ſo learnedly.*——

" I make no applications. All that I ſay " on this occaſion is, that I am ſure that " gentleman has never been at ſea; and con- " ſequently knows nothing of the ſervice, " on which he has been haranguing with ſuch " vehemence, and elocution. He has ex- " patiated moſt pathetically on the injuſtice " of inflicting corporal puniſhment, with- " out a legal trial, and condemnation; and " flouriſhed on the danger of ſuch an inva- " ſion of liberty. Theſe to be ſure are fine " words; but I much doubt whether they " are properly applied on this occaſion. The " moſt perfect form of government is al- " lowed to be *abſolute deſpotiſm*, as beſt cal- " culated to work its effects without delay. " In all the communities in this world, I " doubt if there is one, where immediate " obedience to the command of the gover- " nour is ſo indiſpenſibly neceſſary to the " ſafety of the whole, or where individuals " are ſo inſenſible to every other motive to " obedience but fear, as in a man of war.

" I have myſelf the honour to command " a ſhip, in which I have five hundred men " under me, the greateſt part of whom, (I " am ſorry to ſay it) are the *out-caſts* of " human nature, as from ſome unhappy cir-

" cum-

" cumſtances is, and perhaps muſt always
" be the univerſal caſe in our ſervice. Now
" as inſtances daily occur, in which a mo-
" ment's delay or heſitation to execute my
" orders, though attended with the greateſt
" difficulty, or moſt imminent danger, muſt
" evidently hazard the loſs of the ſhip, and
" every life in her; I deſire that gentleman
" to inform me how I am to act, ſhould
" one of the men, whom I order, ſuppoſe,
" to cut away a yard that's broke in the
" ſlings, refuſe to go aloft, and tell me I
" have no right to puniſh him, till he is re-
" gularly tried and found guilty! Shall I ad-
" mit of ſuch an anſwer, to be an example
" to the reſt? Or ſhall I puniſh him with
" ſuch ſeverity on the ſpot, by my own
" mere authority, as to terrify any other
" from imitating him? The anſwer to this
" plain queſtion will determine the affair
" under conſideration. If it is ſaid that in
" the preſent caſe the ſhip's being in the
" harbour makes a difference, let us ſuppoſe
" her on fire there, and that difference will
" vaniſh. In a word, if the abſolute au-
" thority indiſpenſibly neceſſary for carry-
" ing on our ſervice in ſome inſtances is at-
" tempted to be abridged in any, it will of
" courſe be at length diſputed in all, and
" the ſervice ruined. All that can be done
" is to be cautious not to truſt it in impro-
" per hands."

This

This method of reasoning changed the face of the affair. The counsellor hung down his head, and slunk out of the court. The fears which had been entertained for publick liberty vanished; and the jury simply *found the fact*, but left *the point* of law to be determined by the judges; so that after all this expence and trouble, matters remained in the same state of uncertainty as before, to the great joy of the lawyers.

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's *master joins a remarkable set of company. Their characters.* CHRYSAL *changes his service. Account of the enterprize on which his late master's companions were going; with the convincing arguments they used to procure obedience to their commands.*

THE purser having, on his arrival in LONDON, *parted with* CHRYSAL *regularly, in the execution of the commission entrusted to him by his captain;* CHRYSAL, NOW IN THE SHAPE OF A GUINEA, *after several changes of service, and a variety of curious adventures, has fallen into the hands of a* PHYSICIAN *and* AUTHOR; *who, having shewn him many*

many of the myſteries of the latter profeſſion, proceeds to introduce him into new ſcenes.—Vol. I. page 122.)

Happy in the contemplation of his own abilities, and the pleaſing proſpects they opened to him, my maſter proceeded to *figure* as uſual in his variegated ſphere. Accordingly he deſcended from his *aerial citadel*, and going out, *to viſit his patients*, repaired directly to a tavern, to join a ſet of *criticks*, and *choice ſpirits*, *ſouls of ſentiment and fire*, who were going that evening upon an expedition, that was to immortalize their names.

This was no leſs than to aſſume the modeſt power of making laws that ſhould affect the property of a number of their fellow ſubjects; the execution of which they were reſolved to enforce by the mild, and equitable means, which the reſpectable legiſlature of the mob always uſe to enforce obedience to their decrees.

Thoſe, who were honoured by being taken thus under their immediate command, were *the actors* of *plays* and *interludes*, of which, as the works of *genius*, and calculated for the entertainment of *the idle*, they claimed the ſole, and abſolute rule.

You conclude from this, that they muſt have been perſons of learning, and large fortune, whoſe affluence gave them leiſure to attend to ſubjects, which their education qualified

liſted them to judge of; but the contrary was the fact. They were either *blanks in the Creation*, whom a ſuperficial ſmattering of letters had filled with ſuch an opinion of themſelves, as to make them look with contempt upon every exertion of induſtry, as beneath their dignity, though at the ſame time they were barely able to ſubſiſt without it, by all the little ſhifts of œconomy; or tradeſmen, almoſt abſolutely illiterate, who from a prepoſterous ambition of hiding an ignorance, that was not any reproach to their ſtation, ſet up for the arbiters of taſte, on the ſtrength of a ſet of phraſes picked up at random, and of which they knew not even the meaning; and neglected the buſineſs, by which they were to earn their bread, in order to make a ſhew of knowledge, that could be of no uſe to them.

When this illuſtrious ſet had ſufficiently conned their ſeveral parts, in the great enterprize which they were going to undertake, and raiſed their reſolutions to a proper pitch by wine, they prepared to adjourn to the ſcene of action, the Theatre; and calling for a *bill*, I was *changed* by my maſter to pay his *club*, and directly borrowed from the landlord by one of the leaders of the party, who *changed* me again at the door of the theatre, to pay for his admiſſion.

Theſe changes of my ſervice however did not prevent my ſeeing the proceſs of this ex-

extra-

traordinary affair. On the contrary; as I now belonged to the whole theatrical community in general, I had an opportunity of getting a full inſight into the nature, and myſteries of every part of that profeſſion.

I ſee you deſire to know my ſentiments on a ſubject, that has been canvaſſed by the ingenious of all ages. Such a curioſity is natural, and ſhall be gratified at a proper time; but at preſent I muſt not interrupt the account of this tranſaction.

From the manner, in which thoſe ſelf-made legiſlators had talked, when together, of every circumſtance in the management of a theatre, and profeſſion of an actor, you would have concluded that they were going to over-turn the whole preſent ſyſtem of the ſtage, and inſtitute another on principles directly oppoſite, according to their own ideas of perfection.

But that was not the caſe. Among all the errours and abuſes, againſt which they declaimed with ſuch vehemence, they thought proper to attack only one, which they thought moſt intereſting to themſelves in particular. This was the right, which reaſon, and law gave the performers to fix the price of their own labours.

In the infancy of the ſtage in *London*, before it had been brought by much labour and expence, to ſuch a degree of perfection as to attract the attention of the publick, it had been

been the cuſtom after a certain part of the repreſentation was over to admit perſons, for leſs than was paid at the beginning.

The obvious reaſon of this was to allure company of any kind thither, and take the moſt they could get, rather than keep the houſe empty. But when the paſſion for ſeeing plays aroſe to its preſent height, this expedient appeared to be no longer neceſſary, and therefore was diſuſed; a change which thoſe who conducted the entertainments of the theatre juſtified by alledging the enhanced ſalaries of the actors, and the improvements made in the machinery, and decorations of the ſtage ſince the time when that cuſtom was introduced, which they ſaid required reimburſement, by a method, that could not juſtly be taken offence at, as *none were obliged to go, who did not approve of the terms.*

Such a meaſure was moſt alarming to theſe men of taſte, ſome of whom denied themſelves the pleaſure of going to the beginning of the performance *becauſe they were not able to pay the full price*; as the others *could not get from behind their compters before it was half ended*; and for theſe good reaſons both thought it the higheſt grievance to have a cuſtom aboliſhed, that had been ſo convenient to them.

Accordingly, as ſoon as the performance began, they all aroſe, and without any re-

ſpect to the reſt of the audience, interrupted the players in the moſt outrageous manner, nor would deſiſt, till the managers ſhould promiſe to redreſs the grievance which affected them ſo ſeverely, and take half-prices as before.

This was too flagrant a violation of juſtice to be ſubmitted to, ſo ſuddenly. The managers therefore refuſed; upon which *theſe redreſſers of grievances* gave a looſe to their reſentment, at ſuch an inſtance of diſobedience to their authority; and tore the houſe to pieces, doing more damage to the proprietors, than their own entire worldly ſubſtance could repair.

CHAP. X.

The ruinous appearance of the ſcene of action ſupplies matter for mirth to thoſe whoſe trade it is to laugh at every thing. The point carried againſt law and reaſon. Enquiry into the cauſe of this. The riſe of the prejudice againſt the profeſſion of an actor.

WHEN theſe men of genius and publick ſpirit had thus gallantly accompliſhed their enterprize, they marched off in triumph, denouncing a repetition of their reſentment, ſhould their orders not be obeyed.

The

The appearance of the houſe, after this ravage; and the looks of the actors, when they ventured to creep out of their hiding holes, ſeemed to realize the mimick ſcenes uſually exhibited there. All was havock, deſolation, amazement, and affright. Crowns, ſcepters, candleſticks, and broken benches were jumbled together: Sovereigns, and ſweepers, lords, link-boys, dutcheſſes, and cynder-wenches joined in one common lamentation of their fate.

This, however, laſted not long. Their hearts were not formed of ſtuff, for grief to make a deep impreſſion on: Nor were they ſo unaccuſtomed to the rubs of life as to be dejected at any miſchance. Their concern therefore wore off with their fright; and one of them, reſuming his character of turning every thing to ridicule, marched with ſolemn pace and rueful countenance up to the motley ruins now collected into a heap, and with ſome droll variations, apt to the occaſion, *ſpouted* over them a tragick ſpeech, in all the emphaſis and trick of woe. The humour inſtantly ran through them all. Mirth grinned on every face; and they vied in crackling villainous jeſts on each other's *undoing*.

But the managers had ſuffered too ſeverely in their property to be in ſo merry a mood. They conſulted among themſelves, and *with the ſages of the law*, what was proper for them to do, to obtain redreſs for

ſuch injuſtice, and prevent the menaced repetition of it. But all was to no purpoſe. Law gave way to licentiouſneſs; and they were obliged to ſubmit to the moſt intolerable of all tyrannies, *that of the mob.*

You are ſurprized that ſuch things ſhould be, in a country governed by equal, and eſtabliſhed laws. In ſpeculation it muſt ſeem ſtrange; but the leaſt acquaintance with life would reconcile you to inconſiſtencies ſtill groſſer. There is ſomething however in the circumſtances of this caſe, which deſerves attention, and makes it not improper to trace to their origin the prejudices from which ſuch injuſtice could proceed.

When the ſyſtem of Divine worſhip, which is now profeſſed in theſe parts of the world, was firſt propoſed to mankind, the human mind was a ſlave to ſuperſtitions, which were a diſgrace to that portion of reaſon given for its direction.

By a perverſion, of which man alone is capable, the celebration of thoſe ſuperſtitions, though profeſſedly deſigned in honour of the Deity, was attended with *games*, and *ſcenical interludes*, in which the groſſeſt immoralities received the ſanction of Religion, and were practiſed openly as pleaſing to him. This was done to attach the paſſions of the multitude; and ſatisfy their curioſity with ſenſible repreſentations, in order to prevent their making rational enquiries into the grounds

of

of thoſe ſuperſtitions, the principles of which were ſubſervient to the policy of the ruling powers.

A Religion inſtituted on purpoſe to reclaim man from immoralities and ſuperſtitions, and reſtore him to the dignity of his nature, neceſſarily ſtruck at every thing that conduced to their ſupport: Accordingly the perſons appointed to propagate it exerted all their endeavours againſt thoſe games and interludes, both as a part of the ſuperſtitious worſhip which they wanted to aboliſh, and as in themſelves ſubverſive of moral virtue, by the vices which they exhibited to imitation heightened and made ſtill more alluring by every incentive art, and pomp of expence.

For this purpoſe, reaſon, as well as Religion, ſupplied ready and powerful arguments; but not content to wait for the ſlow effect of theſe, they ſtrove to prejudice thoſe whom they could not perſwade; and to obviate the imitation of their example, raiſed an abhorrence to the perſons of all concerned in ſuch repreſentations, caſting them off from the rites of Religion, and declaring them unworthy both of the protection of the laws, and the common privileges of ſociety: A method, that in one reſpect defeated its own deſign; as it could never reclaim the offenders, however it might deter others from following their example.

Nor did they ſtop here. By an errour too common in the heat of argumentation, they concluded *from the abuſe, againſt the uſe* of the ſtage, and branded with the mark of reprobation all future actors for the faults of the preſent.

CHAP. XI.

Continued. The common conſequence of exceſs of zeal. The profeſſed intent of the theatrical repreſentations defeated by this abſurd prejudice againſt actors. The vices againſt which this prejudice is levelled, in reality the effects of it; with the means for remedying this, and other abuſes.

HOWEVER the occaſion might there ſeem to juſtify this exceſs of zeal, when the cauſe ceaſed, the effect ſhould in reaſon have ceaſed alſo; and theſe general cenſures have been repealed. The ſuperſtitions which were the foundation of the firſt charge againſt the ſtage have been long aboliſhed; nor are the abſurdities and immoralities which gave offence to reaſon and virtue any longer practiſed there. On the contrary, the profeſſed intent of theatrical repreſentations at preſent is to inſinuate inſtruction under the pleaſing appearance of entertainment,

tainment, to encourage virtue by example, and inculcate the practice of it, by ſhewing the evils inſeparably attendant on vice; to regulate the paſſions by diſplaying the danger of indulging them too far, and to put folly out of countenance by holding it up to ridicule.

Now as experience has proved the ſtage capable of anſwering theſe great ends, what can be more injudicious than to attempt to bring it into diſrepute. What more unjuſt than to conſign to infamy thoſe, who exert the fineſt powers of the human mind and body to accompliſh this end in the moſt pleaſing manner? Yet ſuch is the abſurdity of man, that while perſons of the moſt exalted rank, and ſacred character not only frequent the theatre, but alſo compoſe works to be repreſented on it, and evidently value themſelves more on poſſeſſing the abilities requiſite to compoſe them, than on all their other diſtinctions in life, thoſe from whoſe action ſuch compoſitions receive their force and beauty, are held in diſrepute, and ſubject to the ſevereſt diſadvantages only for acting them. If it is no diſgrace *to write a play*, why ſhould it be any *to act it?*

It is true the conſequences of this prejudice are not ſo ſevere here as in other countries, but ſtill they are ſuch as reaſon is aſhamed of. If actors are not *literally* excluded from the protection of the laws, they

want ſupport to avail themſelves of that protection, as in the caſe, which gave riſe to theſe reflections! if they are not *actually (for literally they are!)* excluded from the rites of Religion, they want encouragement to participate in them!

I ſee you are ready to object to the utility of the ſtage, the faults in many of the performances exhibited upon it; and to juſtify the diſrepute affixed to the character of an actor, from the general immorality of their conduct in private life, as if it aroſe ſolely from their profeſſion. But a moment's reflection would ſuggeſt anſwers to both theſe objections.

If there is any improper exhibition upon the ſtage, ſurely the blame ſhould fall on thoſe, who have a legal power to prevent ſuch abuſe of the inſtitution of it! If the actors are immoral in their lives, ſhould it not be conſidered that they are prejudged from their profeſſion; and deprived of one of the ſtrongeſt inducements to virtue, that is *reputation*, before they are proved to be guilty of vice.

The conſequence of this is, that too few enter into the profeſſion, till after they have loſt their reputation, or are driven by mere neceſſity; by which means they reflect that diſgrace upon it, which they are thought to ſuffer from it; and as they are ſenſible that they are precluded by this prejudice from all poſſibility

poſſibility of recovering or preſerving it by the moſt careful deportment, they become deſperate, and proceed till they even loſe the ſenſe of unavailing ſhame.

Whereas, if a different conduct was obſerved to them! if the brand of reprobation was taken off, and the profeſſion eſtabliſhed in that credit, which the abilities indiſpenſibly neceſſary to eminence in it deſerve; Genius would be no longer damp'd by apprehenſion of reproach: More perſons of good character would not ſcruple going on the ſtage, as they could preſerve it there; nor vice ſeem to receive encouragement from publick favour, *becauſe from this circumſtance unhappily too often entangled with merit*; but the life of the actor would reflect the ſentiments of the poet, and enforce them to imitation by example.

Nor would it be difficult to work this important effect. All neceſſary would be to refuſe admiſſion on the ſtage to all, *notorious for vice of any kind*; to baniſh from it *ſuch as ſhould become ſo after, however eminent in their merits*; and *to ſupport the profeſſion by the civil power*, againſt the tyranny of the mob, ſo that the lives and properties of all concerned in it ſhould be ſecure from ſuffering ſuch licentious outrage; and injuſtice, as no other ſubjects are expoſed to; and as are equally a reproach and inſult to good government and common ſenſe.

Nor need it be apprehended that this would make them insolent, or slacken their endeavours to please. Their very being depends on publick favour, the bare withholding of which is punishment sufficiently severe; as ambition to acquire it will make them exert their utmost abilities, and always observe proper humility to the arbiters of their fate. They know that if they are neglected, they cannot live: On the contrary, it would enable them to rise to greater merit in their art, as they would no longer be under the wretched necessity of prostituting their *own* judgment to please the gross taste of their tyrants.

Many other arguments might be alledged against this grievous, and shameful abuse, but what I have said is sufficient to convince candid reason; and with prejudice it is in vain to argue.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

The ſyſtem of policy by which CHRYSAL'*s maſter governed his ſtate. Account of his methods of parrying poets. The reaſon why ſo few new plays are acted. Enquiry into the preſent ſtate of genius. The general motives for writing plays preclude them from ſucceſs. Managers and poets equally in fault in their dealings with each other.*

THE day after this great affair was *thus equitably* ſettled, on *the treaſurer*'s making up his week's account, I came into the poſſeſſion of the *manager*, who having ſome occaſion for money, put *me* into his pocket.

The meaſures of my new maſter's government in his little empire were the ſtrongeſt burleſque on the policy of the world, the greateſt ſovereign in which had not more intrigues *of ſtate* to manage, than were continually carrying on about him, from the ambition, envy, and jealouſy of the ſeveral candidates for his *royal* favour.

But all this buſtle did not embarraſs him in the leaſt. He had the addreſs to *play off* one party againſt another; and *by never engaging himſelf particularly to any*, was able to

manage all. A method, by the bye, that might ſuggeſt an hint not unuſeful to politicians in an higher ſphere.

But the part of his conduct that was moſt curious, and gave me the greateſt pleaſure, was his manner of *parrying* the attacks of the *authors* who were continually bringing him their works for repreſentation on the ſtage, of which I had an opportunity of ſeeing many ſtriking inſtances.

As it is evidently the intereſt of the manager of a theatre, to exhibit thoſe performances, whoſe merit is moſt likely to gain the approbation of the publick; and as no man, who is capable of writing a piece proper for exhibition, can be ſuppoſed to want judgement to know whether it has that merit, you may naturally think that there could not be much difficulty in the intercourſe between them; but human actions are not always to be judged of from the ſtrongeſt appearances of reaſon.

The repreſentation of a new piece neceſſarily puts the manager to ſome expence, and much trouble. If you add to this the natural anxiety about ſucceſs, *for merit is often rejected by caprice, or perſonal prejudice,* you will not wonder that he ſhould be cautious what he brings upon the ſtage; and prefer acting old ones, unattended with theſe inconveniences, while the publick will bear the

repetition,

repetition, and does not peremptorily demand new.

This is the real reaſon, why ſo few new pieces are performed; and not any decline of poetical genius to produce them; it being certain that there are as many good plays written now, as at any former point of time. But the matter is this. All the good ones of thoſe times lie together before you, and raiſe your opinion to the happy days which produced them: But if you conſider the long intervals between, and the innumerable bad ones which appeared along with them, but are now loſt in the wreck of time, you will find that you have not ſo great reaſon to complain of the preſent decline of genius, as you may have imagined.

I do not by this mean, that every one who pretends to write is poſſeſſed of that genius; or that all the pieces offered to the ſtage are proper for repreſentation. On the contrary, many who want every qualification indiſpenſible to ſucceſs in ſuch attempts, make them every day in defiance of reaſon; and ſtrive to obtrude upon the publick works which are a reproach to common ſenſe.

The motives of this are obvious. Whenever a man is at a loſs how to ſpend his time; or wants to raiſe a little money, down he ſits without more adoe, and writes a play. The conſequence of this is, that the very reaſons which made him turn poet, neceſſarily

pre-

preclude him from ſucceſs. *Idleneſs* prevents that care, that *limæ labor*, which alone can make a performance proper for publick repreſentation; and *diſtreſs* depreſſes the imagination; and hinders its riſing to that *happy boldneſs*, which is the eſſence of poetry.

It appears from hence, that if the managers of theatres from intereſted motives are often to blame for rejecting *good* pieces; poets (or thoſe who would be thought ſuch) are much oftener culpable for offering them *bad* ones. The difference of opinion unavoidable on this account occaſions the difficulty in their intercourſe. But in this the conteſt is not equal. The word of the manager is deciſive; while the poet has nothing left, but to vent his reſentment in unavailing (and often unjuſt) complaints, and abuſe, in which thoſe who have leaſt right are always loudeſt; for enamoured with the beauty of their own offspring, like the Ape in the fable, they throw dirt at all, who preſume to find fault with it.

But ſevere as it muſt be to ſuffer this, it is not the greateſt difficulty the manager has to encounter with them. Not ſatisfied with the civil refuſal of affected delays and excuſes, they muſt have a direct anſwer, which they controvert with all their power, and oblige him to ſupport by ſuch arguments as muſt give him pain, if he has either politeneſs, or good-nature; though after all, inſtead

ſtead of convincing them, he only gets their's and their friends ill-will, and arms all their tongues againſt him.

It is not to be doubted but the *evaſions* which managers uſe to *ſhift off good* pieces are as groſſly offenſive to moral propriety, truth and candour, as the arguments of authors in defence of *bad* ones can poſſibly be to reaſon; but as I did not happen to be witneſs to any inſtances of them, I ſhall confine my account to the latter.

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL's maſter ſits in judgement on ſome pieces offered to him. A poet of faſhion enters. The arguments by which he ſupports his work againſt the objections of CHRYSAL's *maſter, who makes ſome curious dramatical ſtrictures. The poet driven from his laſt retreat, the intereſt of his great friends, by the common cant of the houſe's being* FULL *for the ſeaſon, departs in a rage, denouncing their reſentment, which* CHRYSAL's *maſter ſhews his reaſon not to fear the effects of.*

THE important morning after I came into the poſſeſſion of the manager was big with the fate of many a poetical performance, the authors of which were appointed

pointed to come there for his deciſive anſwer.

Accordingly, as ſoon as he had breakfaſted, he repaired to his tribunal, where he had been waited for, ſome time, by one of thoſe aſpiring genius's, who ſacrifice the ſolid happineſs of independance, to the vain ambition *of being well with the great*; ſubmitting to their capricious humours for the honour of a nod in publick places, or an invitation to their tables; to enhance their welcome at which, and conſume time they know not how to make better uſe of, they fall upon this wiſe expedient of turning poet.

When they had gone through all the formalities of polite addreſs, and taken their ſeat with proper ceremony, the poet opened the buſineſs. "Well, Sir," (ſaid he with a ſmile of ſelf-complacence) "You have per-
"uſed that trifle! what is your opinion?
"Heh! don't you think it will do?"

"Sir," (anſwered my maſter, with the ſmooth ſimper of a courtier) "you do it in-
"juſtice by calling it a trifle! the piece has
"a great deal of merit; and reads very
"prettily in many places; but I fear it is
"not quite ſo proper for the ſtage!"——

—"How, Sir! not proper for the ſtage!
"pray, Sir, where does the impropriety lie?
"Several perſons of the firſt rank have read
"it, and found no ſuch thing. *His Grace*
"ſaid it abounded with the *vis comica*. Lord

"*Taſtely*

" *Taſtely* was charmed with the *Attick ſalt*;
" and *Sir Courtly* admired the elegance of the
" diction. Pray, Sir, where then can the
" impropriety lie? They are allowed to be
" judges."——

—" Pardon me, Sir, I do not preſume to
" call their judgement in queſtion, in the
" leaſt. But—a—"

—" And why then ſhould you heſitate to
" receive it? They will ſupport it, with all
" their intereſt."—

" That, Sir, I do not doubt. But—ſtill,
Sir,—the town"——

"—The town, Sir! and pray what of the
" town? Is the judgement of the town to
" be put in competition with theirs?"——

—" No, Sir! by no means! but ſtill the
" town is a very formidable, and arbitrary
" judge; and will not admit its authority
" to be diſputed, in ſuch matters as this."—

—" And pray, good Sir, what objections
" can the judicious town, or you, its learn-
" ed advocate, make?"——

—" Sir, you impoſe a very diſagreeable
" taſk upon me! I had much rather be ex-
" cuſed."——

" I do not in the leaſt doubt that, Sir;
" but my friends inſiſt upon a direct anſwer.
" Either receive the play, or ſay why you
" will not."——

—" Sir, I ſhould be very ſorry to give of-
" fence to any gentleman; but ſince you in-

" ſiſt

" fiſt upon my opinion, Do not you think, " Sir, the plot is too—too—too domeſtick? " Are not the intrigues and tricks of ſer- " vants too low a ſubject for polite enter- " tainment?"——

—" How, Sir! have you any objection to " ſervants? Do not they make a principal " part in all our modern comedies? Are the " *Jeremy's*, and *Scrubs*, and *Phillis's*, and a " thouſand others to be rejected becauſe they " are ſervants?"——

—" No, Sir! but conſider they are not " the principal characters; nor does the plot " turn upon them. They come in, as it " were, by accident; and indeed except in " the inſtances you have mentioned, and per- " haps a very few more, they had much " better be left out. It ſhews a groſſneſs " of taſte to ſtoop to them for entertain- " ment."—

—" And do not I introduce the maſters, " and miſtreſſes too, as well as the ſervants? " Are there not country-ſquires, and town " fops, and fine ladies?"——

" Yes, Sir, you do introduce them, but " in a ſubordinate light; and meerly to be " the dupes of their ſervants, without any " buſineſs, or importance of their own."——

—" And pray, Sir, in what other light " do moſt maſters appear? Hah! hah! " hah!—Well then it ſeems all your objec- " tions are to the fable. You have nothing

" to

" to ſay againſt the ſentiments, and dic-
" tion."——

—" The ſentiments, Sir, may be very pro-
" per; and the diction ſuited to them; but
" you muſt be ſenſible that the former ob-
" jection affects them all equally. The cha-
" racters are too low; and the ſentiments
" and diction conſequently too coarſe."——

" Sir,—Sir,—Sir,—I ſhall not enter into
" any farther arguments with you. *His*
" *Grace* bids me tell you he inſiſts upon
" your receiving it; or giving him ſuch rea-
" ſons, as he ſhall think ſatisfactory, which
" muſt be very different from thoſe inſigni-
" ficant cavils."——

—" His Grace need not exert his authori-
" ty to influence my obedience. The leaſt
" hint of his pleaſure were ſufficient; but
" unluckily I am engaged for the whole ſea-
" ſon; quite *full*."——

—" *Full!* why did you not tell me ſo at
" firſt?"——

—" Becauſe you inſiſted on having my
" opinion."——

—" Very well, Sir! I ſhall let his Grace
" and all my friends know how you behav-
" ed. Let me have the play! impertinent,
" inſolent, ignorant puppy!" muttered he,
as he went out.

" So" (ſaid my maſter, as ſoon as he was
gone) " I have now made him my enemy
" for ever. As for his *noble friends*, they
" are

" are above troubling themſelves about any " thing of the kind, and give him leave to " mention their names, only to get rid of " his importunity."

CHAP. XIV.

Continuation. CHRYSAL*'s maſter rejects the work of a poet for his ignorance of the laws of the drama. More dramatical ſtrictures. The poet modeſtly inſiſts that his play is refuſed only becauſe it wants the intereſt of the great; and goes off in an huff. Another poet repulſed for his attachment to the laws of the drama. Arguments againſt theſe laws. The poet refuſes to conform to the preſent taſte; and makes an appeal. One more poet refuſed only for wanting every poetical talent. Remarks on ſomething that affects more than care to own it.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, on an occaſion not common.*

THE laſt poet was ſcarce down ſtairs, when a footman *announced* the entrance of another.

My maſter did not think it neceſſary to obſerve ſo much ceremony with him, as he had done with the former, but told him directly that he could not receive his piece.

Such

Such a ſentence ſtruck the poet *all of an heap*. He was unable to ſpeak for ſome moments; but recovering himſelf at length, "Not receive it, Sir!" (ſaid he) "you ſurprize me. Pray, Sir, why ſo?"——

"I am very loth to find fault, Sir!" (anſwered my maſter) "But you ſeem to be utterly unacquainted with all *the laws of the drama*."

—"The laws of the drama! they are but art; I write from nature. Theſe laws have been long laid aſide. *Shakeſpear* wrote without laws."——

—"So much the worſe. But he is a dangerous example to imitate. The local, temporary laws of the antient drama are laid aſide, it is true; but not the immutable, general laws of propriety, and reaſon. Your fable is inconnected, improbable, and unaffecting."——

—"How, Sir! unaffecting! Can the fall of a mighty empire be ſaid to be unaffecting?"——

—"No, Sir! But the deſcription of it moſt certainly may, if not drawn with judgement, and force. And then your characters are ill ſupported; and your ſentiments and language loſt in the clouds."——

—"What, Sir! can the ſentiments of Kings and Princes be too ſublime?"

—"There is a wide difference between being ſublime, and ſwollen out of nature."——

"But

—"But what objection can you make to "the language? Is it not raiſed with *epi-* "*thets*, and *metaphors*, and all the figures "of poetry?"——

—"Good Sir! poetical figures in poor "language look like embroidery on a blan- "ket. They only make its poverty ridi- "culous. Beſide your *ſtalking in their ſtilts*, "betrays you into many a ſtumble in the "dirt. Your figures frequently fly in the "face of common ſenſe, and break through "every rule of grammar."——

—"Well, Sir! I ſhall conſider of theſe "particulars. The great objection I have "heard made to modern plays is their want "of buſineſs: But this can never be charg- "ed to mine. There is a *ghoſt*, and a bat- "tle; and a king dethron'd. Buſineſs "enough and enough, I am ſure."——

—"Ghoſts and battles, Sir, it is true, are "ſometimes introduced with ſucceſs; but "then it muſt be by a maſter in the art; "elſe they have a very contrary effect."—

—"I apprehend that the aim of tragedy "is to work upon the paſſions. In this I "believe you cannot ſay I have fail'd. The "diſtreſs is truely great."——

—"Diſtreſs when out of character loſes "the appearance of reality, and becomes "ridiculous. A king in an alms-houſe, and "a queen begging from door to door, are "images which ſink into burleſque."—

"It

—"It is very well, Sir! you may ſay what "you pleaſe, but I am ſatisfied it is not "want of merit in my play that makes you "refuſe it. You daily act much worſe. If "it had been recommended to you by ſome "lord, you would have found none of theſe "faults; but merit may ſtarve without in-"tereſt to ſupport it now a days. This is "fine encouragement to genius truely; and "the publick is like to be well entertained "while ſuch men have it in their power to "refuſe every thing that does not happen "to pleaſe themſelves."——

Saying this he ſnatched up his play, leaving my maſter to pleaſe himſelf with the proſpect of being *criticized upon in a news-paper*, and pulled to pieces in a ſcurrilous pamphlet.

He had not time to indulge theſe reflections long, when another of his clients attended his levee.

As ſoon as he was ſeated, "I have read over "your work with great care;" (ſaid my maſter) "and am ſorry to ſay, I think it "improper for the ſtage."——

—"Pray, Sir, why ſo"? (anſwered the poet, with an air of importance) "It is writ-"ten ſtrictly according to the rules of the "drama; and enriched with the ſublimeſt "ſentiments of the antients."——

—"Sir, I am ſenſible of its merit; as "well as of the great learning of the au-"thor:

" thor: But the taſte of the times requires " entertainment of a different kind."——

"—Surely compliance with a vitiated taſte " will not juſtify the breach of rules, taken " originally from nature, and eſtabliſhed for " ſo many ages."——

"— I neither diſpute the original juſtice, " nor the antiquity of them: But I appre- " hend that the latter in a great meaſure de- " ſtroys the preſent force of the former. The " cuſtoms of mankind, the part of nature " that comes within the province of the " drama, are ſo changed ſince the eſtabliſh- " ment of thoſe rules, that it would be moſt " abſurd to exact obedience to them now. " Beſide, may it not be ſaid, without viola- " tion of the reſpect due to antiquity, that " experience in a great length of time may " have made many improvements in thoſe " rules. The infancy of every art is weak."—

—" But whatever change may have hap- " pened in the cuſtoms of the world, truth " ſtill remains the ſame, and the genuine " ſentiments of nature can not diſpleaſe."—

—" Very true! but ſtill they may not al- " ways be received with equal pleaſure, in " the ſame garb. Unimpaſſioned ſentiment, " however juſt and ſublime, works not the " effects deſigned by the drama, whoſe aim " is to convey inſtruction and pleaſure at " the ſame time, by an immediate addreſs to " the paſſions."——

" Is

—"Is it poſſible, that you can be an ad-
"vocate for the irregular monſters, which
"at preſent diſhonour the ſtage?"——

—"As for irregularity, I look upon it
"to be but an imaginary defect. Though
"even if it were otherwiſe, I am the ſervant
"of the publick, and obliged to find enter-
"tainment for their taſte, be it what it will.
"If you would but conform"——

—"No, Sir! that I never will, againſt rea-
"ſon and the antients. I ſee you are preju-
"diced, and therefore ſhall not argue with
"you any longer. But I ſhall not acquieſce
"in ſilence. I will publiſh the performance,
"without being diſcouraged by your refu-
"ſal, and appeal to the judgement of the
"learned."——

He then marched off with a ſtately pace, and my maſter looking after him, "There "again" (ſaid he, ſhrugging his ſhoulders) "I ſhall now have the ghoſts of *Sophocles*, "and *Ariſtotle*, and all the doughty antients "raiſed to haunt me."—

As he ſaid this, a perſon entered whoſe whole appearance ſpoke diſtreſs. He approached my maſter bowing lowly, and trembling with anxiety as he ſpoke: "I have "made bold to wait upon you, Sir!" (ſaid he) "but if you are not at leiſure, will call "another time."—

"Pray, Sir, ſit down;" (replied my maſter, with a ſmile of encouragement) "I have

" looked over your work, and am concern-
" ed that it is not in my power to receive
" it; as I ſhould be ſincerely glad to ſerve
" you. But in this, it is not poſſible. I
" muſt be plain with you.—You ſeem to
" want every poetical talent."——

" I thought, Sir," (returned the poet, ſcarce able to collect ſpirits enough to ſpeak to him) " that the buſineſs of tragedy was
" to work upon the paſſions! I depended
" entirely on the diſtreſs."——

—" Very true, Sir! But there are other
" paſſions, beſide pity to be applied to; nor
" is poverty a proper diſtreſs to work upon
" them. Severe as it is to be felt, it affects
" but little in repreſentation. The upper
" ranks of life know not what it is; and
" thoſe who do are deſirous to keep the
" thought at a diſtance; and conceal a know-
" ledge they are aſhamed of. The mind
" muſt be properly prepared to feel for ano-
" ther. The deſcription of a famine would
" affect but little after a feaſt."

This came too home to the unhappy poet. He burſt into tears; and was departing without being able to make any reply. My maſter felt his diſtreſs; tho' he could not receive his play, as he knew that an audience would pay no regard to his circumſtances, nor give up an evening's entertainment to relieve an author's indigence; and waiting on him to the door, ſlipped a couple of guineas

neas into his hand; when it fell to my lot to change my ſervice.

I had never experienced my own influence on the human heart ſo ſtrongly, as on this occaſion. The poet kiſſed the hand of his benefactor in a rapture too big for utterance; and forgetting for a moment all his diſtreſſes, went to a coffee-houſe and *changed* me to pay for his breakfaſt; "where I was immediately *borrowed* at the bar, by an officer, who was going to dine with his general, and wanted money to give his ſervants." *Vol.* I.—*Page* 122.

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL's *maſter engages in a genteel amour. A delicate way of refining pleaſure. His miſtreſs perſwades him that ſhe has poiſoned him, and herſelf. His ſituation on hearing this. Striking proofs of medical ſkill with the advantage of a regular courſe of practice. An examplary inſtance of charity and forgiveneſs diverts the doctors attention to the murdereſs.*

(CHRYSAL, *after having ſeen ſeveral ſtriking ſcenes, in the courſe of an extenſive circulation, is at length carried to an horſe-*

race, where he is initiated in ſome of the myſteries of the turfe.)

" It was on a ſporting bet, on one of the " bye-matches, that I was *loſt* that evening " to the nobleman, as I ſaid, in whoſe poſ- " ſeſſion I happened to remain till the end " of the meeting." *Vol.* II.—*Page* 96.

As it was late in the evening when my maſter arrived in *London*, he reſolved to indulge himſelf for that night, in the embraces of a tender hearted female, whom he *picked up* in the ſtreet, (for he was no way nice in his amours,) as he walked from the inn, where he alight, to his own houſe, in order to ſtretch his legs.

Nothing more than common occurrences paſſed upon this occaſion. When his lordſhip had made his miſtreſs *nobly* drunk, *by the way of refining his pleaſure*, the delicate pair went lovingly to bed together, where awaking about midnight, he was ſurprized to find her cold, and lifeleſs in his arms. After ſome fruitleſs efforts to move her, he ſtarted out of bed in a fright, and called up all his ſervants; who perceiving that ſhe was not actually dead, took ſuch pains to recover her, that ſhe at length opened her eyes, and ſtaring wildly around her for ſome moments, " Where am I?" (ſaid ſhe) " Are theſe the " regions of the damn'd? For thither only " can ſuch ſelf-murdering wretches, as I am, " go."

"go."——Then ſeeing his lordſhip, whoſe curioſity had brought him to the bed-ſide, "and are you dead too?" (continued ſhe, wringing her hands, and weeping moſt paſſionately) "O why did I not confine my "rage to myſelf? Why did I add your "murder to my own, to plunge my ſoul "ſtill deeper in perdition?"——

This ſurprized all preſent. The ſervants who were indifferent whether it was true or falſe, imagined ſhe only raved, and doubled their efforts to bring her to herſelf, ſoothing her with expreſſions of tenderneſs, and telling her ſhe was not dead, but would ſoon be very well: But my maſter was too nearly concerned to think ſo coolly of the matter.

"What is that you ſay?" (ſaid he trembling in horrour) "What is it you ſay about "murder? There is no one murdered here."

"How!" (anſwered ſhe, fixing her eyes eagerly upon him) "Is it poſſible, that I am "ſtill alive? And that you alſo live? It "cannot be! the poiſon which I ſwallowed "this night, and in which you ſhared too "largely, cannot have miſſed of its effect. "But ſoft! its operation now begins! that "pang!——oh!——that pang beſpeaks the "near approach of death!—O mercy!—O "cry for mercy on your ſins!"——

"What poiſon?" (interrupted he, terrified almoſt to diſtraction) "What poiſon

" have I ſhared in? Speak! tell me direct-
" ly, or"——

" Spare your threats my lord," (ſaid ſhe, with a compoſure in her looks and manner that perſwaded every one preſent ſhe was in her ſenſes) " ſpare your threats to a wretch, " whom death will ſoon deliver from your " power; and forgive a crime, that pro- " ceeded from deſpair. Wearied of the mi- " ſeries of this life, I this night reſolved to " put an end to it, and for that purpoſe, " though on another pretence, procured a " doſe of poiſon from a Chymiſt's appren- " tice, who on giving it to me, ſaid it was " ſufficient to kill twenty of the ſtrongeſt " men alive: And this poiſon did I take an " opportunity to put into the laſt bottle of " wine, when you went out of the room, " determined to ſacrifice one man to my re- " venge for the injuries I had received from " the ſex: Though after I had done it, my " heart relented; but you inſiſted on my " drinking, and fear of your reſentment " prevented me from making a diſcovery, " that would have ſaved us both from this " unhappy"—At theſe words, ſhe fell into convulſions ſo ſtrong that every one, who ſaw her, thought ſhe was really in the agonies of death.

The ſituation of my maſter, at this ſight, may be eaſily conceived. He inſtantly felt every pain, that poiſon could produce; and falling

falling on the floor roar'd aloud in anguiſh of mind and body, lamenting his untimely fate, and confeſſing all the ſins of his life, to the ſervants who ſtood around him.

As ſoon as they had raiſed him up, and carried him into another room, a dawn of hope aroſe at his finding he did not immediately die. "What!" (exclaimed he) "is "every one combined againſt me? Am I "to periſh for want of aſſiſtance? Will no "body even call me a phyſician? Perhaps "I might yet be ſaved, were proper means "applied! will no body call me a phy-"ſician?"——

On his ſaying this every one was running to obey him, the ſight of which threw him into new diſtreſs. "O wretch that I am!" (exclaimed he) "and ſo I am to be left "alone! to periſh for want even of a drop "of water! is it not enough for ſome of you "to go; and not all to deſert me in this "baſe, this barbarous manner?"——This ſeemed to reſtore them to their ſenſes; and accordingly while ſome went to call the doctors, the reſt ſtaid to take care of him.

Where the carrion is, the crows will ſoon be gathered together. He was immediately ſurrounded by half the meagre faces of the faculty, (for as he had not named any one in particular, his ſervants to ſhew their care had ſummoned all they knew of) who taking the account he gave them of his being

poiſoned for truth, proceeded inſtantly to practiſe upon him every method they had ever heard of being uſed in ſuch a caſe, in hope that ſome one of them might take effect. He was cup'd, bled, and bliſtered; vomited, clyſtered, and purged, in the ſpace of two hours; the doctors ſagaciouſly diſcovering new ſymptoms of the poiſon, every new remedy they tried.

When they found that beyond their expectations he had ſtrength enough to out-live all this, they put him into bed, and covering him up warm, to take a ſweat, comforted him with hopes of his recovery, in conſequence of their ſkill, and care.

While they waited *patiently* for this important criſis, ſome of them happened to think of the poor murdereſs, who had been neglected all this time, and now lay in a ſwoon, the convulſions having gone off, as her ſtrength failed.

On hearing her name mentioned, his lordſhip to ſhew his Chriſtian charity, and prove the ſincerity of the repentance and amendment, which he vowed in caſe his life ſhould be mercifully ſpared, deſired that they would do ſomething for the unhappy creature, if ſhe was ſtill alive. This was ſufficient to attach their compaſſion and care. They anſwered with one voice, that it was a pity to let her periſh, without even attempting to ſave her, and praiſing his lordſhip's goodneſs,

pre-

prepared to try ſome experiments upon her alſo, if only to do ſomething for their fee.

CHAP. XVI.

The recovery of the murdereſs opens a new ſcene. She clears up the myſtery, leſs to the ſatisfaction of the doctors, than of their noble patient, who rewards her liberally for her good news; and ſends them off without their errand. Reflections on ſome genteel matters: CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

THEIR practice upon this new ſubject however was cut ſhort by a ſucceſs, more ſpeedy than they deſired; their firſt operation of bleeding bringing her directly to herſelf.

As ſoon as ſhe perceived what had been done, and recovered ſtrength to ſpeak, "Good "God," (ſaid ſhe) "what is the meaning "of this? Who can have been ſo inhuman "as to bleed me, when it is known to be "ruin, in my diſorder?"——

"In your diſorder!" (ſaid one of the doctors, with a contemptuous frown) "what "diſorder? Have you not poiſoned your-"ſelf? And what is ſtill worſe, his lordſhip "alſo; who now lies in the ſame deſperate "condition with you, and has from his un-

" merited goodneſs directed us to take this " care of you; though if we can ſave you " from this death, it muſt be to ſuffer one " more ignominious."

" I poiſon myſelf!" (interrupted ſhe, raiſing herſelf up in the bed) " I poiſon his " lordſhip! What can you mean by this? " I underſtand you not; and am innocent, " even in thought, of any ſuch crimes. Explain yourſelf therefore; and do not ſport " with the miſery of a wretched creature, " who has more real diſtreſſes than ſhe is " able to bear, without the addition of imaginary guilt."——

This amazed them all. They ſtood looking at each other for ſome moments, wrapt in reflections, not the moſt pleaſing, on the conſequences which might attend their precipitation in treating his lordſhip in the manner they had done, in caſe what ſhe ſaid ſhould prove true. At length on her repeating her intreaties, one of them condeſcended to inform her of every thing that had paſſed, dwelling particularly on the deſperate condition his lordſhip had been in, and the various methods they had uſed to relieve him.

Weak and diſpirited as you muſt ſuppoſe her to have been, ſhe was ſcarce able to refrain from laughter at this account. " A " deſperate condition he muſt be in now in" deed;" (ſaid ſhe) " whatever he was in " before!

" before! but if you will give me leave to " ſlip on my gown and go to him, I'll ſoon " compleat his cure."

This was a ſtep ſo contrary to all rules of practice, that they could not permit it. On the contrary, one of them obſerving the impropriety of liſtening to the ravings of a perſon, whoſe head muſt certainly be diſtracted by the effects of the poiſon, they all took the hint, and were actually going to hold her down by force, in order to proceed in their experiments upon her, which you may think would not have been the more merciful, for what ſhe had juſt ſaid.

But ſhe was delivered from this diſcipline, by the appearance of his lordſhip, who on one of his ſervants carrying him the pleaſing news of what ſhe ſaid, had found ſtrength enough to run to her, and throwing himſelf on the bed, " O my deareſt girl!" (exclaimed he, claſping his arms around her neck) " am I not then a dead man? Tell me! " tell me the truth, directly! am I not a " dead man?"——

His haggard looks, and the bandages and flannels, in which he was wrapped all over, convinced her of the truth of what the doctors had told her, he had ſuffered. Shocked at the thought, ſhe held up her hands in a ſupplicating poſture, and imploring his pardon for what ſhe had been the involuntary cauſe of, informed him that ſhe was

ſubject to fits, which attacked her with double violence whenever ſhe drank to any exceſs, as his lordſhip had compelled her to do that night, much, he muſt have been ſenſible, againſt her inclination had ſhe dared to refuſe him; and that when ſhe was in thoſe fits, which laſted till the effects of the liquour went off, ſhe was apt to rave, and ſpeak every extravagance and inconſiſtency that could come into a diſordered head.

The manner in which ſhe ſpoke left not the leaſt room for doubt. All his fears were inſtantly removed, his joy at which obliterated the rememberance of every thing he had ſuffered in mind and body, and he not only forgave her, but alſo made her an handſome preſent in recompence for her happy news.

But his doctors met with a very different treatment. He reviled them in the ſevereſt terms, for their ignorance and preſumption in putting him to ſuch torture, and tearing his conſtitution by ſuch violent means, before they were certain of his ailment; and without permitting them to alledge in their vindication his aſſertions of what he felt, and intreaties not to leave any thing unattempted, that they thought might poſſibly relieve him, ordered them to be turned out of doors, without giving them a farthing for all their trouble.

I have ſeen that you were ſurprized at his lordſhip's indelicacy, and diſregard to his health,

health, in having an amour with a creature in ſo low a ſtate of infamy and wretchedneſs, as to walk the ſtreets to offer herſelf to caſual proſtitution; as well as at her expreſſing herſelf in a manner ſo much above her appearance, and circumſtances. But the leaſt acquaintance with the world would eaſily account for both.

When once a woman falls from chaſtity, the characteriſtick virtue of her ſex, the deſcent to this loweſt degree of human miſery is natural, and ſeldom, very ſeldom falls to come of courſe. The kept-miſtreſs, who this day ſhines in brocade and jewels, and rattles about in her chariot, will in a few months ſpend the night in the ſtreets, for want of an habitation to hide her head, and without cloaths to ſhelter her from the inclemencies of the weather, when the novelty, that firſt recommended her is worn off; *for no proſperity that is not eſtabliſhed on virtue can laſt.* Theirs indeed is of all the moſt fleeting; the vice which is their ſupport affecting their own conduct by example, and making them laviſh profuſely, what they get from profuſion.

Such had been the caſe of this female. She had been entitled by birth and education to better hopes; but vice had blaſted all, and left her only the reflection of what ſhe might have been, to aggravate her preſent wretchedneſs.

As

As to him! his health poſſibly was in a ſtate not worthy of regard! and for his delicacy! the indiſcriminate vague intercourſe of the ſexes effectually deſtroys that, as well as the ſentimental attachment, which refines the deſire of rational beings, and diſtinguiſhes it from the groſs appetite of brute animals, ſo that in general nothing farther than the gratification of that appetite is now ſought; and as that can be effected by any one object, as well as another, whether it is found in a palace or a brothel makes no difference, with thoſe, who profeſs themſelves men of pleaſure. The ſex is all they ſeek, without regard to any qualifications; and conſequently, when their appetites are gratified, they deſert the objects of them with the ſame indifference, as they took them.

But to return to my maſter. It was ſome time, as you may imagine, before he recovered the effects of this affair; but I remained not with him ſo long. The doctors, in revenge for the treatment they had met with, blazed it abroad, with the addition of every ridiculous circumſtance they could invent. This brought all his acquaintances to have a laugh at him upon the occaſion; to one of whom he *loſt* me that afternoon on a bet, at a race, between two of the *maggots*, which they found in the nuts they cracked after dinner.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter goes to be admitted into an extraordinary ſociety. Some reflections not ſuited to the taſte of the times. Riſe of this ſociety. A deſcription of a monaſtery, with an account of its members, and of ſome of its rules.*

THE next morning after I came into the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, he ſet out upon a party of pleaſure of a moſt extraordinary nature. This was to be admitted into a ſociety, formed of a number of perſons, of the firſt diſtinction, in burleſque imitation of the religious ſocieties, which are inſtituted in other countries.

I have already told you, that I ſhall not give any opinion in religious matters. But whether the original inſtitution of ſuch ſocieties was right or not, as the motive of them was the worſhip of the Deity, any attempt to turn them into ridicule moſt certainly muſt be wrong; the mind of man ſeldom being acute or attentive enough to diſtinguiſh between matters, which to appearance are ſo intimately connected, as the mode of worſhip, and the object of it; but generally involving either in the diſregard affecting the other.

other. In the preſent inſtance indeed, the diſregard was deſignedly levelled at both alike.

To give you a proper notion of the ſcene in which my maſter was going to act a capital part, it is neceſſary to trace the whole from its original.

A perſon of a flighty imagination, and who poſſeſſed a fortune that enabled him to purſue thoſe flights, cloyed with common pleaſures, and ambitious of diſtinguiſhing himſelf among his companions, had reſolved to try if he could not ſtrike out ſomething new, that ſhould at the ſame time pleaſe his own taſte, and do honour to his genius.

The meer gratifications of ſenſe, in their utmoſt extent, not anſwering his deſign, he had recourſe to the aſſiſtance of imagination to enhance them. The great *butt*, againſt which men of pleaſure play off all their wit is Religion. Their reaſons, for a practice ſo groſs, are obvious. As the voice of conſcience will ſometimes intrude upon them ſo as to pall their higheſt pleaſures, in the very moment of enjoyment, their firſt endeavour is to ſilence it, which they find by experience cannot be done ſo effectually by any other method, as this of taking off the reſpect paid to Religion, from which conſcience borrows the terrors, that make its admonitions ſo unwelcome. Beſide, they think it ſhews their ſuperiority over the reſt of mankind to laugh

at

at what they are afraid of; as it is alſo convenient for their character of wit, to exert it on topicks, where it is ſafe from being rivaled, by men of real underſtanding.

Theſe weighty conſiderations determined him to ſeaſon his ſcheme as high as he could with impiety, in order to make it be the better reliſhed. Accordingly, after due deliberation on a matter of ſuch moment, he at length hit upon a plan, that pleaſed him.

In the middle of a large lake upon his eſtate, there was an iſland, the natural beauties of whoſe ſituation had been heightened by every improvement of art. On this iſland he erected a building, exactly on the model of the monaſteries, which he had ſeen in other countries; and to make the reſemblance compleat, there was not a vice, that he had ever heard imputed to the inhabitants of them, for practiſing which he did not make proviſion in his. The cellars were ſtored with the choiceſt wines; the larders with the delicacies of every climate; and the *cells* were fitted up, for all the purpoſes of laſciviouſneſs, for which proper objects were alſo provided.

Thus far the ridicule, however criminal in itſelf, may ſeem to have been deſigned only againſt thoſe ſocieties of human inſtitution: But it was beneath his genius and ſpirit to ſtop here. Nothing leſs would ſatisfy him, than to attack the very eſſentials of the Religion

ligion eſtabliſhed by the laws of his country, and acknowledged by every ſerious perſon in it, to be divine.

For this pious purpoſe, when every thing was prepared for their reception, his next care was to find a fraternity proper for the place. But in this, his rank, and courſe of life made him not long at a loſs. He ſelected from among his intimates a number equal to that of thoſe, who had been at the firſt choſen to inculcate the Religion, which he deſigned to ridicule, whoſe names they aſſumed, as he with equal modeſty and piety did that of the divine author of it: And to ſupply any decreaſe in this number by death, or deſertion from the terrours of reflection, he inſtituted an inferiour order of as many more, choſen alſo with the greateſt caution and regard to the latitude of their principles, their fortunes, and mirthful accompliſhments.

The probationary office of theſe latter was to attend upon their ſuperiours in the celebration of their myſteries, which were all performed in the chapel of the monaſtery, where no other ſervants were ever permitted to enter, on the moſt common occaſion, as the very *decorations* of it would in a great meaſure have betrayed their ſecrets, the ceiling being covered with emblems and devices too groſs to require explanation to the meaneſt capacity; and the walls painted with the pourtraits of thoſe whoſe names and characters

racters they assumed, represented in attitudes, and actions, horrible to imagination.

Nor was their care to keep their mysteries impenetrably secret confined to this exclusion of common servants. The diffidence of conscious guilt made them even distrust each other, till bound to secrecy by oaths, and imprecations, receiving their force, from the Religion thus abused by them: An absurdity common among men associated for the most flagitious purposes.

But strong as the power of superstition is over weak and wicked minds, (for nothing but the grossest superstition could make them think oaths in such circumstances binding!) their secrecy was secured by a still stronger motive, which was fear.

They were sensible that even suspicion of such vices would for ever exclude them from the society of all those, whom in despite of themselves, they could not help holding in respect; and that so outrageous an insult upon the laws was liable to punishment from the secular power, though they might by their interest evade the direct effects of which, yet the imputation would make them so obnoxious to the people in general, that they could no longer hope to enjoy any of the lucrative employments of the state, if their resentment did not arise still higher, and make them take that punishment into their own hands! and these fears prevented the secrets being divulged even by such as had resolu-

tion

tion enough to desert the society; as they imagined the stain could never be so effectually expunged, as to secure them from those consequences.

The rites of this society, and the ceremonies observed upon admission into it will be best explained by the account of what I saw my master perform on this occasion, when he was a candidate for the higher order, having already served his noviciate in the lower.

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL's master arrives at the monastery. The manner of his being admitted into the society. Character of his competitor. The method he took to revenge the society's injustice in prefering CHRYSAL's *master to him. The mirth of the company disturbed by the entrance of* THE DEVIL, *just as he was invoked by* CHRYSAL's *master. The effect of such a visitor upon the company. The* DEVIL *fixes upon* CHRYSAL's *master in particular, and makes him squeak.*

IT was about four o'clock in the afternoon when my master arrived at the verge of the lake, where he no sooner made the concerted signal, than a boat was sent to ferry him over.

On

On his landing in the iſland, he went to the monaſtery where he found the ſociety juſt ſitting down to dinner, at which he took his place among them. When they had made a ſhort meal, and drank their ſpirits up to a proper pitch, they retired to their reſpective cells, to prepare for the ſolemnity they were going to celebrate. My maſter then clad in a milk-white robe of the fineſt linnen, that flowed looſely round him, repaired at the tolling of a bell, to the chapel, the ſcene of all their myſterious rites, and knocking gently thrice at the door, it was opened to him, to the ſound of ſoft, and ſolemn muſick.

On his entrance he made a moſt profound obeiſance, and advancing ſlowly toward a table, that ſtood againſt the wall, in the upper end of the chapel, as ſoon as he came to the rails, by which it was ſurrounded, he fell upon his knees, and making a profeſſion of his principles, nearly in the words, but with the moſt groſs perverſion of the ſenſe of the articles of faith of the religion eſtabliſhed in the country, demanded admiſſion within the rails, the peculiar ſtation of the upper order, where the ſuperiour and eleven of the fraternity (the twelfth place was vacant, and now to be filled up) ſtood arrayed in the habits of thoſe, whoſe names and characters they profaned by their aſſumption.

When

When he had finiſhed, another candidate advanced in the like manner, and making his profeſſion alſo prefered the ſame claim; as there were more who had a right to do, but diſcouraged by the ſuperiour merit of theſe two, they had declined their pretenſions for this time.

The brotherhood having heard the competitors with attention, retired to the table, and kneeling around it, the ſuperiour repeated a prayer, in the ſame ſtrain and manner with the *profeſſion* of the candidates, *to the Being whom they ſerved* to direct their choice to him of the two moſt worthy of his ſervice.

The ſuperiour then proceeded to take the ſuffrages of the reſt, with the ſame mimick ſolemnity; when my maſter being found to have the majority, his election was exultingly attributed to immediate inſpiration, and he was accordingly admitted within the rails, where he received *the name* and *character*, which he was to bear in the ſociety, in a manner not proper to be deſcribed, every the moſt ſacred rite and ceremony of Religion being profaned, all the prayers and hymns of praiſe appointed for the worſhip of the Deity burleſqued by a perverſion to the horrid occaſion.

In this manner the evening was waſted till ſupper-time, when they ſat down to a banquet in the chapel, in honour of the occaſion, at which nothing that the moſt refined luxury, the moſt laſcivious imagination could

ſuggeſt

ſuggeſt to kindle looſe deſire, and provoke and gratify appetite was wanting, both the ſuperiours, and the inferiours, (who were permitted to take their places at the lower end of the table, as ſoon as they had ſerved in the banquet) vying with each other in looſe ſongs and diſſertations of ſuch groſs lewdneſs, and daring impiety, as deſpair may be ſuppoſed to dictate to the damn'd, in both which, my maſter ſhone ſo unrival'd as to bear down the ſuperiour ſprightlineſs, wit, and humour of all the reſt; and compenſate for the want of every companionable merit.

But while they were in the height of their feſtivity, an affair happened, that interrupted it for a time, and ſhewed their reſolution, particularly that of my maſter, in a proper light.

The perſon, who had that day been his competitor for the honour of admiſſion into the higher order of the ſociety, poſſeſſed the qualifications, which he wanted, in the moſt eminent degree. He had ſuch a flow of ſpirits, that it was impoſſible ever to be a moment dull in his company. His wit gave charms to every ſubject he ſpoke upon; and his humour diſplayed the foibles of mankind in ſuch colours, as to put even folly out of countenance.

But the ſame vanity, which had firſt made him ambitious of entering into this ſociety, only becauſe it was compoſed of perſons of a

rank

rank ſuperiour to his own in life, and ſtill kept him in it, tho' upon acquaintance he deſpiſed themſelves, ſullied all theſe advantages. His ſpirits were often ſtretched to extravagance to over-power competition. His humour was debaſed into buffoonery; and his wit was ſo proſtituted to the luſt of applauſe, that he would ſacrifice his beſt friend for a ſcurvy jeſt; and wound the heart of him, whom he would at that very moment hazard his life and fortune to ſerve, only to raiſe a laugh; in which he was alſo aſſiſted by a peculiar archneſs of diſpoſition, and an unlucky expertneſs at carrying his *jeſts into practice*, as he proved upon this occaſion.

Though he diſdained to decline the late competition, as the others did, he had been well aware that my maſter's higher rank in life would carry the point in diſpute againſt him; for which injuſtice he reſolved to revenge himſelf in the moſt ſignal manner.

For this purpoſe he had contrived the night before, to bring into his cell a great *Baboon* which he had provided for the occaſion. When the brotherhood retired to their cells after dinner as I have told you, to prepare for the ceremony, he availed himſelf of the office of keeper of the chapel, which he then filled, to convey this creature, dreſſed up in the phantaſtick garbe, in which childiſh imagination cloaths devils, into the chapel, where he ſhut him up in a large cheſt, that ſtood there to hold the ornaments,

and

and utenſils of the table, when the ſociety was away. To the ſpring of the lock of this cheſt he faſtened a cord, which he drew under the carpet that was on the floor to his own ſeat, and there brought the end of it through an hole, made for the purpoſe, in ſuch a manner that he could readily find it; and by giving it a pull, open the cheſt, and let the *Baboon* looſe, whenever he pleaſed, without being perceived by any of the reſt of the company.

Accordingly, when they were all in the height of their mirth, on my maſter's kneeling down, and with hands and eyes raiſed toward Heaven repeating an invocation, in the perverted phraſe of Holy Writ, to the Being whom they ſerved, to come among them, and receive their adorations in perſon, he pulled the cord, and let the animal looſe, who glad to be delivered from his confinement gave a ſudden ſpring upon the middle of the table.

The effect, which the ſight of ſuch a viſitor had upon them, may be better conceived than expreſſed. Their attention had been ſo fixed upon what my maſter was ſaying, that they perceived not from whence he came; and his appearing ſo critically at the invocation, and in ſuch a ſhape, made them conclude he was *the Being invoked.*

Terrified out of their ſenſes by this thought, they all roared out with one voice, *The Devil!*

the Devil! and ſtarting from their ſeats made directly toward the door, tumbling over one another, and over-ſetting every thing in their way.

In the height of this uproar and confuſion, *the Baboon* frighted at the effects of their fear, happened to leap upon my maſter's ſhoulders, as he lay ſprawling on the floor, who turning about his head and feeling the ſhock, ſaw the animal grinning horribly at him, and concluded the Devil had obeyed his ſummons in good earneſt, and come to carry him bodily away.

Driven as he was to deſpair, by this thought, he ſtrove however, in the inſtinctive impulſe of ſelf-preſervation, to ſhake off the invader; but he, inſtead of looſing his hold, on his repeated efforts, only clung to him the cloſer, claſping his paws around his neck, and chattering with ſpight at his ear. This compleated the caitiff's diſtreſs. Every ſhadow of ſpirit failed him, and conſcious guilt ſuggeſting to him the meaning of this unintelligible jargon, he attempted in the blindneſs of his fear to move the very Devil to pity, by his pathetick wailings, and ſupplications.

"Spare me, gracious Devil!" (ſaid he) "ſpare a wretch, who never was ſincerely "your ſervant! I ſinned only from vanity of "being in the faſhion! thou knoweſt I never "have been half ſo wicked, as I pretended;

"never

"never have been able to commit the thou-
"ſandth part of the vices, which I have
"boaſted of. Take not then the advan-
"tage of that vanity; but judge me only
"from my actions. I knew not that thou
"wouldſt have come, or I ſhould never
"have invoked thee! leave me therefore,
"and go to thoſe, who are more truly de-
"voted to thy ſervice. I am but half a
"ſinner. My conſcience always flew in my
"face when I committed any crime! my
"heart gave the lie to my tongue, when I
"gloried in my vices; and I trembled at the
"damnation I affected to brave! O ſpare
"me therefore, at leaſt for this time, till I
"have ſerved thee better. I am as yet but
"half a ſinner."

CHAP. XIX.

The DEVIL *is degraded to a* BABOON, *and his appearance well accounted for, which reſtores the mirth and courage of the company, and particularly of* CHRYSAL'*s maſter, who exerts himſelf to recover his character. The appearance of the be-deviled* BABOON *is traced next day to his introducer, who at the inſtance of* CHRYSAL'*s maſter is expelled the ſociety for preſuming to ridicule their rites. Farther conſequences of this affair make the ſuperiour break up his monaſtery, and build a church.*

WHILE my maſter was making this eſſay of his eloquence upon *the Baboon*, the perſon who had brought him there took the opportunity of the conſternation the whole company was in, to open one of the windows unperceived by them for the animal to make his eſcape, which he no ſooner ſaw, than he made directly to it, giving my maſter an happy releaſe.

Before he could get clear off though, one of the company, who was bolder than the reſt, having muſtered reſolution to raiſe his head, got a full view of him, and perceiving what he was, juſt as my maſter concluded his

his ſupplications, "Your prayers are heard!" (ſaid he, ſtarting up, and ſpeaking as ſoon as a burſt of laughter gave him utterance) "your prayers are heard for this time; and "that Devil of a great *He-baboon*, that's "juſt gone out of the window deſpiſing *half* "*a ſinner*, has ſpared you, till you are fitter "for his ſervice."——

At hearing theſe words, they all aroſe from the floor, where they had lain ſprawling on top of one another, and looking in amazement, at him who had ſpoke them, "Cou-"rage, my friends!" (ſaid he) "this is but "a falſe alarm! our *maſter* is not ſo ready "to come for us when we call him, or we "ſhould none of us all be here now. How "*a Baboon* though ſhould come here to ſcare "us all out of our little wits in ſuch a man-"ner, the Devil may tell you, if he will, for "I cannot; but I'll ſwear I ſaw one go out "of that window."——

"And I'll ſwear too, that I ſaw him come "in at it;" (replied the author of the miſchief, who ſaw no way to eſcape detection, but by preventing farther enquiry by this bold lie) "as I juſt then happened to look about "to ſee from whence the wind came, that "blew upon my poll."——

This eccl*a*ircilſement ſatisfied them all! they inſtantly ſet the room to rights, and plaiſtering up their broken ſhins and noſes, ſat down to conclude their carouſal, re-

ſuming their former ſtrain, in which they all exerted themſelves in an uncommon manner, to wipe off the diſgrace of their late *ſqueaking*, particularly my maſter, who *out-did his uſual out-doing*, in profaneneſs, blaſphemy, and wickedneſs of every kind, to recover his character, and convince them he was more than *half a ſinner*.

They held in this hand, till nature ſunk under the fatigue, when they retired to ſleep off their debauch, in their *cells*, where, as I ſaid, proper proviſion had been made for them, to reduce the theory of the day into practice, in the intervals of reſt.

Though the affair of the *Baboon* had paſſed off ſo cleverly while their ſpirits were in ſuch a flurry, when they came to enquire more coolly into it next day, the whole trick came out. It had been impoſſible to convey him into the monaſtery, without the privity of ſome of the ſervants, who had all ſo often *felt the jeſts* of this gentleman, that they were glad of an opportunity of being revenged upon him now, by making the diſcovery.

This account, confirmed by ſome circumſtances in his behaviour, which they had not attended to at the time, plainly pointing out the guilty perſon, the ſuperiours adjourned directly to the chapel to conſult how they ſhould proceed on ſo delicate an occaſion. For though they had always highly approv-

ed

ed of such *wit*, when *practised* upon others, they looked upon the application of it to themselves in the most heinous light, especially in such an instance as this, the consequences of which had exposed them to the contempt of each other, by detecting their *weakness*, and shewing that the guilt in which they gloried was only feigned.

Mortifying as this was to their vanity, they thought however that the case was general, afforded them some consolation. However, to remedy the effect of this, and prevent a repetition of the like disgrace, it was proposed, after mature deliberation, and much learned argument on the question, to bury what was past, by a solemn act of amnesty, and make a special law, whose observation should be enforced *by an oath*, that no member should ever after presume to attempt exercising his wit upon the society, in any manner, or by any means whatsoever; on taking which oath, and asking pardon upon his knees, at the door of the chapel, the offender should be forgiven.

To this proposal, they all assented except my master, who for private reasons thought the latter part of it much too mild for so flagrant a crime. He had long cherished a secret grudge against the other, who not only often pointed his wit against him, in a manner that he could not digest nor knew how to resent, it being as polite as it was.

keen, but alſo put him conſtantly to the expence of double wickedneſs, the only qualification in which he could poſſible ſhine, to avoid being totally eclipſed by him: His deſire of revenge alſo was ſtrongeſt on this occaſion, as he had ſuffered the deepeſt diſgrace.

Accordingly he exerted all his eloquence, two ſhew *the enormity of the crime of attempting to turn any of the rites and ceremonies eſtabliſhed by the laws of the ſociety into ridicule*; the letting of which eſcape without adequate puniſhment, he ſaid, would argue weakneſs and want of ſpirit in them, and muſt end in the ruin of their authority; for which weighty reaſons he propoſed that the offender ſhould be directly expelled the ſociety in form, as the only effectual way to vindicate their dignity, and prevent others from offering it the like inſult for the future.

This gave the affair a new turn. They all took fire at the thought of their dignity's being inſulted, and expelled him that moment, without even waiting to hear him in his own defence. But he ſoon had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing himſelf amply avenged.

The care they took to keep every thing they did ſecret, had long awoke the curioſity of the neighbourhood, who were the more ſevere in their gueſſes, the leſs able they were to gueſs right. But the affair of the *Baboon*, whom the ſervants got ſight of, be-

fore

fore he could be caught, and whether miſled by his dreſs, or miſrepreſenting by deſign, gave out to be *the Devil*, was no ſooner known, than a formal ſtory was propagated over the whole country, that the end of their meeting was to worſhip the Devil, to whom this chapel was dedicated, and who had *often* been ſeen among them, in variety of ſhapes.

Scandal always meets eaſy credit. The ſtory was believed by many, and repeated by more as if they believed it, never loſing any thing in the repetition; till ſuch an univerſal alarm was raiſed among the people (who are content to infringe the precepts of Religion, without denying its authority) that the ſuperiour, whoſe ſeat was in the neighbourhood, found it neceſſary to diſſolve the ſociety, and effacing every trace of it, convert the building to the better uſe of a pleaſure-houſe, in which he entertained all his neighbours in general, whenever he was in the country: Beſide which, he alſo built a church, on an eminence near his houſe, that anſwered the double purpoſe, of convincing the populace of his regard to Religion, and of making a beautiful termination, to a viſta which he had juſt cut through a wood, in his park.

I have anticipated theſe circumſtances to ſatisfy your curioſity; as I have alſo omitted many, and ſoftened more particulars in

this account, which were too horrid to have been repreſented in their proper colours.

CHAP. XX.

A farther account of the rules of the convent; with ſome ſtriking inſtances of œconomy. A ſeeming inconſiſtency accounted for, from a principle not ſufficiently underſtood. Some remarkable effects of vanity. Reaſon of the abuſe of wealth.

YOU are aſtoniſhed how ſuch ſcenes of debauchery and exceſs could be ſupported, either by the fortune of the entertainer, or the conſtitutions of his gueſts; but this ſhall be explained.

To prevent ſatiety or fatigue, theſe meetings were never protracted beyond a week at a time; nor held oftener than twice in a year; by which frugality of pleaſure, they were always returned to, with the keenneſs of novelty: And as for the expence of them, that was defrayed jointly by the whole community; (the ſuperiour contributing nothing more, than any other member, except the firſt coſt of building the *convent*, which he thought himſelf amply recompenſed for, by the honour of having ſtruck out the plan;) and regulated by the ſtricteſt œconomy; the

ſlaves

ſlaves of their luſts being ſent back to the brothels, from whence they had been brought; and the ſervants of their luxury diſcharged, at the end of every meeting; and no more retained for the reſt of the year, than an old man and woman who took care of the place.

To you, who have ſupported the dignity of your nature, by prefering the pleaſures of that reaſon, which was given to diſtinguiſh man from brutes, to thoſe of ſenſe, which they enjoy in common with him, the picture of this whole ſcene muſt appear *over-charged*, and irreconcileable with the great principles of human action, which always propoſe ſome *good*, either preſent or future, however the judgement may err in the thing propoſed. But more acquaintance with life would ſolve this difficulty to you.

The general motive for attempting to turn Religion into ridicule has been already explained. But as ſome are ſeen to give into this practice, who ſeem to cultivate their reaſon with moſt ſucceſs; and whoſe actions, and even inclinations appear not to have the remoteſt tendency contrary to moral virtue, it may be proper to account for ſuch an exception.

The firſt principle of action, impreſſed by nature on every thing that lives, is *ſelf-preſervation*. From this, *brute* animals, which *by neceſſity* proceed regularly in the courſe preſcribed for them, never ſwerve: But the

rational animal, man, bewildered in his own imaginations, by the abuſe of that *liberty*, which was given him to enhance the merit of his obedience to the dictates of *reaſon*, often ſubſtitutes another in its place, by whoſe impulſe he acts in direct oppoſition to it.

This is *vanity*; the real ſource of that ambition, which courts danger, and plunges with open eyes into deſtruction, however ſpeciouſly it may be diſguiſed under the pompous titles of love of glory, and regard to the publick good; as well as of moſt of the extravagancies, and abſurdities, which puzzle ſuperficial obſervers, and make them preſumptuouſly impeach as a defect in the work of nature, their own neglect, and perverſion of its laws.

A particular enquiry into the effects of this *ſuppoſititious* principle, many of which, as I ſaid, are blazoned as the brighteſt virtues, while more are acknowledged to be the moſt atrocious crimes; or how nearly ſuch virtues and crimes, proceeding thus from the ſame ſource, may be allied, though curious and intereſting in itſelf, is not neceſſary here. It is ſufficient to obſerve, that its power is able to break the force of habit, reconcile contradictions, and confound the eſſential differences of things; to cope with *prejudice*, and over-rule the *infirmities* of nature.

This

This it is, for inſtance, that makes the *conſtitutional* coward, who trembles at the thought of danger, and would ſee his country ruined, rather than draw his ſword in its defence, *fight duels* for a doubtful punctilio of empty ceremony; the *ſuperſtitious* wretch, who finds *omens*, in *ſpilled ſalt*, and *croſſed ſtraws*, and *ſees Goblins* and *Devils* in the dark, profeſs infidelity, ridicule Providence, and dare the wrath of Heaven, by inſults and bravadoes; and laſtly, this it is, that makes the hoary Sage, whoſe life has been regulated by the ſtricteſt principles of morality and religion, while paſſion might have rebelled againſt them, commence Libertine in the impotence of old age, and glory in vices he has loſt the power to practiſe. Of the juſtice of theſe remarks, the members of this ſociety, of which vanity was the cement, as it had been the origin, afforded the moſt glaring proofs.

You wonder what there could be to be vain of, in ſuch an aſſociation! but you do not reflect, that vanity is never the reſult of real worth. The falſe glare of publick eſtimation reflects it from the vileſt and moſt reproachful objects.

The inſtitutor of this ſociety was *admired* for every polite accompliſhment, every power of pleaſing in converſation; and the firſt ſet he choſe were all of the ſame caſt. This, with their rank and fortunes, and above all,

the

the myſtery of the inſtitution, which ſet curioſity on fire, and gave imagination room to form the moſt flattering ideas of it, made admiſſion into it, an object of univerſal ambition, as it ſeemed a proof of every member's meriting the ſame character; and when once admitted, a vicious fear of ridicule made too many aſhamed to quit it; and even they, who did, were precluded from diſcovering any thing that might deter others, by the ſecrecy to which they were ſworn.

There is one thing more, which from the particular circumſtances of your own life affects you more than any other, in this account. This is the folly and ingratitude of laviſhing the bleſſing of wealth to the diſhonour of the donor; and with ſo little regard to its real uſe. But this, as has been the caſe in other inſtances, proceeds from want of better acquaintance with life.

It has been remarked by travellers, that in thoſe parts of the earth, where the bleſſings of nature are beſtowed with greateſt liberality, the people ſeem leaſt ſenſible of them; and are ſunk in the groſſeſt vice; as if reaſon and virtue were incompatible with the good things of this world.

The reaſon of this remark holds with reſpect to wealth in other countries. Provided to profuſion with every thing they want, the rich look no farther than to the gratification of their appetites and paſſions; as the means

means to procure which are in their poſſeſſion, they acknowledge no obligation to the power, which firſt gave, and ſtill preſerves the enjoyment of them; but on the contrary, affect to ſhew their independance, by proſtituting it to purpoſes, directly contrary to his declared pleaſure; and this cauſes that abuſe of wealth, which generally marrs the bleſſing, and makes the gift of it ſo dangerous.

CHAP. XXI.

Account of the members of the ſociety. The hiſtory of the ſuperiour. The particular qualifications by which he aroſe in life. Succeſs in a private inſtance encourages him to try his talents, in an higher ſphere, from which he ſoon deſcends with diſgrace. A ſtriking inconſiſtency in his character.

I SEE you deſire to have ſome account of the ſeveral members of ſo extraordinary a ſociety. When the great lines which diſtinguiſh the characters of mankind, are marked by virtues, or even by ſuperiour abilities, that dazzle ſuperficial obſervation, by the ſplendour of their effects, and paſs for ſuch, however different in the tendency of their exertions, the delineation affords pleaſure; but

but on the contrary, where thoſe lines are all diſtorted by vice and folly; and diſtinguiſhed from each other only by different modes and degrees of them, the contemplation is a pain; and to paint them a taſk ſo diſagreeable, that nothing but an impartial regard to truth could make it be undertaken. However your curioſity ſhall be gratified.

As the *convent* was dedicated to pleaſure, you may imagine that play made a part of their entertainment. Contrary indeed to the ſcheme of all other parties of pleaſure, it was not the firſt object of their meeting; and only ſerved to fill up the intervals between other pleaſures, which nature without ſome reſpite could not ſupport in ſuch exceſs. The circulation however, even in this *piddling* for meer amuſement, gave me an opportunity of taking a view of all their characters; ſuch of which as contained any thing worthy of your notice, for you muſt not expect it from them all, I will give you ſome general ſketches of.

As the looks of a man are generally a comment on his heart, I will place the whole company in your view, as I have done on other occaſions, to aſſiſt you in forming a proper notion of their characters. At the head of the table ſits the ſuperiour. You ſee every eye is expreſſively fixed upon him, in admiration at the vivacity, humour, and wit in all he ſays, while by an art peculiarly happy,

happy, he alone ſeems unconſcious of his own preheminence.

Theſe talents, which from the intoxication of preſent applauſe, are much oftener of prejudice than advantage to the poſſeſſor, by diverting from more ſolid purſuits, proved the foundation of his exalted rank and fortune; becauſe always directed by the deepeſt and moſt delicate addreſs.

The firſt inſtance, in which this addreſs was diſplayed, was in his own family. He had a diſtant relation who had ſpent his youth in ſuch buſy ſcenes, as left not time for his imagination to wander in ſearch of amuſement. To a mind accuſtomed to be wound up to ſuch a pitch, the charms of a converſation like his were a relaxation, irreſiſtibly engaging. He inſinuated himſelf inſenſibly into his favour, and by ſeeming to have nothing in view, but his pleaſure, led him as he pleaſed himſelf, not only into all the lengths of his own libertiniſm, ſo as to be a member of this ſociety, when the decline of life, at leaſt, ſhould have ſuggeſted more ſerious thoughts; but alſo at his death to reward his complaiſance with a much larger portion of his fortune, than he had any claim to, from conſanguinity or the preference of reaſon.

Such ſucceſs encouraged his ambition to higher attempts. Introduced by the ſame qualifications to the acquaintance of *the great*, he

he not only gained their favour by them, but alſo impoſed them upon them for abilities of an higher claſs ſo far, that being ſecure of his ſubſerviency to their deſigns, they admitted him to a ſhare of their power.

But in this he had deceived himſelf, as well as them; as he found to their diſappointment, and his own extream confuſion, upon the very firſt tryal of his political talents, when he ſhewed in the ſtrongeſt light the difference between the abilities requiſite to raiſe a laugh, and rule a nation.

He had ſenſe enough however to ſee his miſtake, before it had involved him in any conſequences, from which he could not recede without danger as well as diſgrace; and prudently ſacrificing his ambition to his ſafety, he turned off all with a laugh, and returned to the enjoyment of thoſe pleaſures, for which nature ſeemed to have ſo particularly deſigned him. Whether that enjoyment is as ſincere and undiſturbed though, as ſhould appear from his looks and conduct, is a point not ſo certain, as you may be apt to imagine.

The principles, on which this ſociety was originally inſtituted, and from which it has never deviated, *the profeſſed ridicule of moral Virtue and Religion*, ſhould ſeem to have proceeded from an utter diſbelief of a Deity; or at leaſt, a fearleſs defiance of his power; but contrary to this, there ſtarts not at his own

own ſhadow, a more abject ſlave to ſuperſtition, and all its fooliſh fears, than he was at the time of his inſtituting it, and ſtill remains.

Such an inconſiſtence requires explanation to you, whoſe notions of life are formed ſolely from rational ſpeculation.

CHAP. XXII.

Continuation of the hiſtory of the ſuperiour. The inconſiſtency in his character accounted for. The reaſon of his being ſent early to travel for education. Political principles all neceſſary to be attended to, in a tutor. The method and effect of his tutor's care to inſtruct him in Religion. A frighiful ſtory gives riſe to a frightful dream, which is interrupted ſtill more frightfully. A tremendous apparition terrifies him into a ſwoon. Account of the apparition.

THE political principles of his family being in avow'd oppoſition to their Sovereign, the earlieſt care was taken to inſtil the ſame into him; and the ripeneſs of his parts and genius flattered them with a promiſe of his future conſequence in the ſtate.

For this purpoſe, before reaſon ſhould have time to be convinced by experience of the injuſtice, and danger of ſuch deſigns, he was

ſent

ſent abroad to be educated in a country, where every object ſhould concur to prejudice him againſt the laws and conſtitution of his own, and the opportunity of perſonal intercourſe confirm his attachment to him, whoſe intereſt he was intended to promote.

The publick conduct of his life has ſufficiently ſhewn the ſucceſs of this ſcheme; as an incidental circumſtance in the execution of it will alſo account for the inconſiſtencies in his private character.

The religious principles eſtabliſhed in the country, whither he was thus ſent for education; and the political ones, it was deſigned he ſhould aſſiſt to eſtabliſh at home, were ſo intimately and eſſentially connected, that it was impoſſible to find a tutor for him ſufficiently attached to the latter, to anſwer the purpoſe of his family, who was not alſo at leaſt ſecretly inclined to, even if he did not openly profeſs, the former.

But this made no difficulty. Religion is in reality the thing leaſt thought of, however pompouſly it may be profeſſed in political ſchemes. They ſcrupled not therefore to commit his tender mind to the influence of ſuch an one, regardleſs what impreſſions he might make upon it, beſide thoſe they deſired: An opportunity which he did not fail to take advantage of.

Accordingly, as ſoon as the tutor and his pupil were ſettled in the place of their deſignation,

nation, the former began his deſign, by diſplaying on every occaſion the excellence and importance of the ceremonies and rites of the Religion profeſſed there, as the objects moſt likely to ſtrike the levity of youth, always complaining with a contemptuous concern of the want of ſuch in that of his own country; not chuſing to ſpeak more directly at firſt, for fear of giving him any alarm.

But artful as this method was, he had the diſappointment to ſee, it did not ſucceed ſo well as he could wiſh. Though from the manner of his pupil's earlieſt education, it was eaſy enough to ſink his own Religion in his opinion, yet ſome circumſtances rendered the raiſing of any other in its place, a matter of more difficulty, than might have been obviouſly apprehended. His natural quickneſs and turn for ridicule made him ſee every thing in the moſt diſadvantageous light, at the firſt glance, at the ſame time that his diſſipation and levity prevented his attending to the abſtruſer arguments, often neceſſary to eſtabliſh the credit of matters of ſuch importance beyond the reach of rational doubt; ſo that all the pains his tutor was piouſly taking to enlarge his faith, threatened to work the contrary effect, of making him an infidel.

Alarmed at this, the tutor, whoſe bigotted credulity had ſwallowed every fiction of ſuperſtition, had always ſome miraculous ſtory

ſtory of a *judgement* or *apparition* ready to refute the ſcoffs of his pupil, and confirm the truth of whatever he himſelf advanced. The conſtant repetition of ſuch tales, which he plainly ſhowed his own belief of, inſenſibly made ſuch an impreſſion on his pupil's imagination, as perſwaded him of their poſſibility at leaſt, if he was not abſolutely convinced of the truth of every thing in proof of which they were alledged; and filled him with fears, for which a good foundation had before been laid in the nurſery.

When his mind was thus prepared to catch at every terrour, his tutor took him one day to ſee the exhibition of one of thoſe miracles, which are ſaid to be wrought at the ſhrine of a conteſted ſaint; and which really weaken the credit of the Religion, they were deviſed to ſupport.

The abſurdity was too ſtriking to eſcape his obſervation. He turned it into the moſt poignant ridicule, in ſpite of all his tutor's pains to defend it; who finding that his arguments had no effect, had recourſe to his uſual proof of an *apparition*, which he dreſſed up in every colour and circumſtance of horrour, to make it have the greater weight.

His pupil took not more than uſual notice of the matter, while light and company diverted his thoughts; but when he went to bed, and found himſelf alone, and in the dark, the whole flaſhed upon him in all its terrours,

rours, heightened in every inſtance, by the livelineſs of his own imagination.

What he felt in ſuch a ſituation may eaſier be conceived than expreſſed. He covered up his head with the cloaths; and lay ſweating and trembling, till his mind was wearied with dwelling on the ſame thoughts, and he ſunk into a kind of ſlumber.

But this was far from giving him relief. He was no ſooner aſleep, than imagination, now in her own empire, placed him, in the midſt of the ſcene, which had juſt before been ſo elaborately deſcribed to him, by his tutor, from the contemplation of which he was delivered only to ſuffer ſtill more ſeverely; being awakened by ſounds uncouth enough to ſtartle at ſuch a time, the moſt reſolute mind unacquainted with them.

Such a continuation realized all the horrours of his dream. He ſtarted up; and turning in the inſtinctive curioſity of affright to that part of the room, from whence the ſounds ſtill continued to come, ſaw four glaring eye-balls fixed upon him, at the ſame time that a voice diſtinctly articulated, but in a tremendous tone, and language which he did not underſtand, thundered directly in his ear.

The darkneſs, which prevented his ſeeing the bodies, to which thoſe eyes belonged, and his ignorance of the import of the ſounds, only added to his fright by giving room to imagina-

imagination, not only to form the moſt horrible conceptions of them, but alſo to apprehend them ſtill more horrible than he could conceive. He was not able to ſupport ſuch an attack; but giving one helpleſs ſhriek, ſunk back in a ſwoon.

His tutor, who lay in the next room, and had been awakened by the ſame ſounds, but was not ſo much terrified at them, both becauſe his mind was not ſo well prepared for terrours, and that he was acquainted with their cauſe, heard him ſhriek, and knowing his voice, ran to him, imagining he was engaged in a conflict, in which he might want aſſiſtance, with the *cats*, which he heard in his room; for from two of thoſe animals, which finding the window open, had choſen it for the ſcene of their amours, had thoſe dreadful ſounds proceeded.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

Continuation. Behaviour of the tutor on finding his pupil in a ſwoon. He recovers; and terrifies his tutor by miſtaking him for a ſaint. Charity begins at home. The tutor ſagaciouſly gueſſes at the meaning of the miſtake; and piouſly reſolves to improve it. The pupil's full and true account of the apparition, with the tutor's honeſt addition to it. His repentance, and converſion. His tutor moderates his zeal for weighty reaſons. He relapſes; and his tutor, for private reaſons divulges the whole affair. The method he took to invalidate the ſtory.

YOU may judge how he was affected at ſeeing the perſon, upon whom all his hopes of wealth and preferment were founded, in ſuch a ſituation. Awkard at the beſt, he now knew not how to attempt giving him any aſſiſtance, nor had even the preſence of mind to call any one who could, ſo great was his embarraſsment and confuſion. Nature however ſoon delivered him from his diſtreſs, and reſtored his hopes, by the recovery of his pupil.

As ſoon as he came a little to himſelf, he ſtared wildly round him for ſome moments,

and then fixing his eyes upon his tutor, who ſtill ſtood gaping in amazement at him, he miſtook him, from his being in his ſhirt, for the Saint that ran in his head; his imagination ſtill continuing the former ſcene, and holding up his hands in a ſuppliant poſture, as he lay trembling on his back, "O "mercy, gracious Saint!" (ſaid he) "Have "mercy on my youth! never will I again "preſume to ridicule any of the ſacred rites "of Religion! never will I admit a doubt "of any thing it commands me to believe! "O mercy! mercy."—Saying which words he fainted away again.

This addreſs, one word of which the tutor did not underſtand, threw him into a fright almoſt as great as that of his pupil. He ſtood for ſome time ſtupified by aſtoniſhment, till the cold reminding him that he was in his ſhirt, care for his own health conquered every other concern, and made him go to put on his cloaths before he attempted to do any thing for the other.

While he was dreſſing himſelf, he conſidered what his pupil had ſaid, with rather more attention than his fear had permitted before, and recollecting the ſubject of their converſation the preceding evening, concluded that Heaven had made uſe of ſome ſupernatural means to ſubdue his infidelity, the impreſſion of which remaining ſtill upon his mind had occaſioned his miſtaking him in the

the manner he did, for a Saint; (for that he ſhould be terrified to that degree by the ſcreaming of the cats, never came into his head) and piouſly reſolved to contribute his aſſiſtance to the deception by taking no notice that he had been with him before, or even denying it, if he ſaw occaſion.

With this intention, he returned to his pupil, determined though not to diſcloſe his ſuſpicion, till the other ſhould make ſome diſcovery to direct him more certainly how to proceed.

His pupil, who was juſt come to himſelf, knew him directly now he was dreſſed, and catching his hand eagerly as ſoon as he came within his reach, "O my deareſt, my beſt "friend!" (ſaid he preſſing it to his lips) "What have I ſuffered ſince I ſaw you? "How dearly have I paid for the profaneneſs, and infidelity of which you have ſo "often reproved me, with pious and paternal care. But never will I be guilty of "the like again. I reſign myſelf implicitely to your direction; and will from "this hour believe every thing you require "me."—

His tutor, after giving him ſome ſpiritual comfort, and encouraging his perſeverance in this pious reſolution, deſired to know what had been the happy occaſion of it, to which the other anſwered, that *ſome little time after he went to bed, the room was ſuddenly*

ly enlightened in a manner not to be deſcribed, when the apparition, of which he had given him an account the evening before, ſtood before him wrapped in blue flames, and breathing ſmoak and ſulphur; and calling to him in a voice that appalled his ſoul, denounced Heaven's vengeance againſt his infidelity, which he was juſt going to put in execution, when the holy Saint, whoſe miracles he had ſo impiouſly turned into ridicule, appeared all robed in white, and circled round with glory; and interpoſing between him, and the ſpectre, the latter gave a ſhriek that ſhook the room, and then vaniſhed in a flame of fire; upon which the Saint turned to him with a look ineffably benign, and exhorting him to repentance, gave him his benediction, and diſappeared.

Ready as his tutor was to believe every thing, that exceeded belief, when alledged in the cauſe of Religion, the circumſtance of his own having been miſtaken for a Saint, ſtaggered his faith in all the reſt, and made him for once juſtly conclude that the whole miracle was no more than a fiction of that fear with which the ſcreaming of the cats ſtruck him in his ſleep, for he now plainly traced the effects of their voices.

However, far from undeceiving him, he improved upon the thought; and as ſoon as his pupil concluded his tale, with a grave face and ſolemn air added a ſequel to it, of equal truth, but dictated by a very different degree

degree of veracity; the former being deceived himself, and having eked out the illusions of his fear, as distracted imagination suggested to him; whereas the latter aggravated those illusions, by untruths premeditately devised to confirm that deception.

He said, *that grieved at the danger with which an unhappy prejudice of education threatened the spiritual safety of one so dear to him, instead of lying down to rest, he had fallen upon his knees, and poured out his soul, in prayer and supplication to Heaven to enlighten his (pupil's) mind, and convince him of his errours, in which holy exercise he had continued ever since, till this moment, when in the impulse of a perswasion, which he now perceived to have been divinely inspired, that his prayers were heard, he came to satisfy himself of the reality of so miraculous an event, for which he begged him to join in returning immediate thanks to Heaven, and the blessed Saint, who had wrought it.*

This compleated the deception of his pupil, so far as to make him believe the truth of some parts of his own tale, which he was not altogether so certain of before. He arose therefore, and reconciling himself to the faith of his tutor, by the strongest, and most full professions, dedicated the remainder of the night with him to prayer, and pious conversation.

In the first heat of his devotion, he was for making the whole affair publick, and openly joining himself to that Religion, whose truth was thus confirmed to him. But his tutor moderated the fervency of his zeal, sensible that such a step would not only defeat the political designs of his friends, which must be carried on under a masque, and in whose success his own wishes were most warmly interested; but also overturn his own hopes of being well rewarded for the care of his education, by a church-living of great revenue, that was in the gift of one of his pupil's relations, who had promised it to him, as soon as the incumbent, then sinking under all the infirmities of extreme old age, should die: For his religious principles never interfered with his interest.

For these most weighty reasons, though as you may imagine he communicated only the former, he prevailed upon his convert to be content with the private practice, without the profession of his new faith, till he should in the fullness of time be so happy as to contribute his assistance to the great event, which should establish it in his own country.

Such an argument could not fail of effect, upon one who found the fervour of his devotion cool so fast, that in a few days the whole matter was entirely reversed, and his practice as libertine as ever, though fear of

ſeeing any more ſpectres reſtrained his profeſſions within more decent bounds. For ſo deeply was the dread of them imprinted on his mind, that to this day he dares not to ſleep by himſelf, or be a moment alone in the dark: Though his tutor ſoon after his return home, divulged the whole affair, as far as it affected not himſelf, with the addition of many circumſtances, if poſſible ſtill more contemptibly ridiculous than the true, to revenge his procuring the living for one of his raking companions, and ingratiate himſelf with a particular enemy of his, from whom he expected a recompence for ſo pleaſing a piece of ſcandal; to invalidate which was one of his pupil's motives for inſtituting this ſociety.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIV.

Account of the members continued. History of one who turned libertine, in speculation, after he had lost the power of being so in practice. How this happened; the force of literary vanity; and the reason why it is stronger than any other. Instances of the advantages reaped from encouraging genius. A new method of flattery is successful where all others had failed, and by a master-stroke makes vanity gain a signal triumph over virtue.

AT the right hand of the superiour you see one, whose example should be a warning to mankind never to be off their guard against the allurements of vice, while there is any possibility, however remote and improbable, of their falling into it.

While youth might have been pleaded in excuse of passion; and the busy application of manhood extenuated any speculative errours in opinion, his conduct had been regulated by the strictest regard to the principles of moral virtue, and the precepts of Religion. But in the evening of his days, when all that heat and hurry give place to cool reflection, and the serenity of the prospect more

more than compenſates for its approaching cloſe, the whole ſcene was wretchedly reverſed, and his ſetting ſun over-caſt, with a cloud of vices moſt blameable in any ſtage of life, but aggravated ten thouſand-fold in his, to which they were unnatural.

I have told you before, that vanity was the cauſe of a fall, ſo reproachful to humanity: The manner though of its operating upon one, who ſeemed to be removed ſo far beyond its reach is worthy of attention.

In no inſtance is the power of vanity ſo tyrannically exerted over the human heart, as when it ariſes from an opinion of literary merit. The reaſon is obvious. Real learning is the moſt effectual check to vanity, as it ſhews the inſtability of its foundation. When therefore any thing that makes pretence, however falſely, to that name, ſeems to adminiſter to its ſupport, it inſtantly looks upon itſelf as above controul.

Though early engagement in the active ſcenes of his country's ſervice had prevented his making any great proficiency in the more abſtruſe purſuits of ſpeculation, his natural inclination to them directed by a taſte formed by the beſt education made him embrace all opportunities of patronizing every advance in ſcience, and improvement in the finer arts.

The

The liberality with which he indulged this inclination ſoon marked him out to the attacks of every needy adventurer in the trade of letters. Projectors conſulted him on their ſchemes. Poets ſubmitted their works to his correction. His virtues, among which munificence was never forgot, were the inexhauſted theme of panegyrick; and dedications declared to the world his abilities, and knowledge.

Adulation ſo groſs was an affront to reaſon. He rejected with juſt contempt the praiſes to which he knew himſelf not entitled, and was ſuperiour to the flattery, which compaſſion for the flatterer often made him ſeem to pay for. Happy had he always preſerved the ſame delicacy!

Among the crouds of paraſites, who lay in wait thus for his favour, was a perſon, whom idleneſs ſeduced to prefer this abject ſtate of dependance to the purſuit of a liberal profeſſion, which he had been bred to: A baſeneſs aggravated by his poſſeſſing every qualification neceſſary to have made him eminent in any ſtate.

This man, who had thoroughly ſtudied the human heart, ſoon ſaw that any direct attack upon his patron would prove ineffectual. He therefore ſtruck out a new ſcheme, the depth of which ſecur'd it from *detection*, tho' at the ſame time, the difficulty of carrying

ing

ing it into execution would have discouraged any one, less anxious for success, and confident of his own abilities. He disguised the strongest flattery under the masque of the most cynical bluntness, and candour, and instead of praising all he did, and echoing in assent every word he spoke, he missed no occasion of differing in opinion with him, declaring he thought that being, who could debase the dignity of his nature so far as to give up his judgement to another, from any other motive than rational conviction, unworthy of the name of man.

A behaviour so singular necessarily attracted the notice of his patron; as the manner in which it was carried on, soon won his favour: For in all the debates of any moment, which this champion for liberty of thought held with him, he managed with such delicate art, as to lead him (his patron) to confute him, though frequently contrary to the opinion, with which he had originally set out. In trifles indeed, where being foiled could reflect no disgrace, he proceeded not with that caution, but often gained a victory, for which he laughed at himself when it was won.

But with others he observed not such moderation. Be the subject what it would, he exerted all his powers, (and great as I have said they were) till he silenced at least, if he

could not convince his adverſary, over whom he then triumph'd in all the inſolence of ſuperiority.

Such a method could not fail of ſucceſs! his patron ſure of coming off with honour, ſought every opportunity of entering into debate with him, and contracted an eſteem for one who as he thought had thus diſcovered to him his own abilities, while every one elſe declined entering into a conteſt, which always involved them in diſgrace.

Encouraged by this ſucceſs, he boldly ventured upon a ſtroke, the event of which was to decide his hopes. In gratification to his own depraved taſte, he had written a treatiſe in which the groſſeſt libertiniſm was ſet in ſo advantagious and alluring a light, and the arguments againſt it evaded with ſo much plauſibility and true wit, as were almoſt ſufficient to put virtue out of countenance, and debauch its ſincereſt votaries.

The contradiction between ſuch principles, and the practice of his patron, through his whole life, would have deterred any one leſs enterprizing, and experienced in the weakneſſes of human nature, from diſcloſing them; but he had lately made ſome diſcoveries, which emboldened him even to puſh his deſigns much farther, than owning himſelf the author of that book.

While

While the vigour of life had enabled his patron to perſiſt in buſier purſuits, he had deſpiſed the flattery paid to his literary merits; but as ſoon as the infirmities of age rendered him unfit for ſuch employment, he with a natural partiality gave the preference to that preheminence, which he thought ſtill within his reach, and affected to ſlight all fame, that was not founded on the nobler labours of the mind.

This was a ſufficient direction to the paraſite. He immediately ſhewed his book with a myſterious air, to ſeveral of his patron's friends, giving them broad hints at the ſame time, but under the ſeal of ſecrecy, that he was author of it. There is no way ſo effectual as this to ſpread any ſtory. One whiſpered it to another, till in a few days, the whole town was in the ſecret.

The hints, and alluſions which were every hour thrown out to the patron, on this occaſion, perplexed him not a little, as he knew not what they meant. A ſecret though in the poſſeſſion of ſo many could not poſſibly remain long ſuch to him. One of his acquaintances provoked at the ſeeming affectation of his not underſtanding his hints, told him the whole affair.

Much as he was ſurprized at the account, vanity would not let him ſuppreſs it by a direct negative, as the book was mentioned

in terms of the higheſt praiſe. He anſwered with the coy evaſions of modeſty, the moſt effectual affirmation, and ſhifted off any farther diſcuſſion of the ſubject, till he ſhould be better informed.

Accordingly the moment his friend left him, he ſent for the author of the report, and charging him with it, deſired to ſee the performance which he had done him the honour to father upon him.

The paraſite, who took his cue from the looks of his patron, was far from denying the charge. He preſented him the book without heſitation, ſaying with his uſual bluntneſs that if it was not actually written by him, it was literally written from him, being nothing but what he had frequently ſaid on thoſe ſubjects; and therefore might without any injuſtice be aſſerted to be his.

The advantageous manner in which the patron had heard the book ſpoken of prevented his making any reply, till he ſhould have read it, when he was ſo ſtruck with the various beauties of it, that vanity ſubdued all his virtue, and deprived him of the power of denying it. "If the ſentiments are "mine!" (ſaid he, bluſhing at his own baſeneſs, as he ſpoke) "I am obliged to "you for placing them in ſo advantageous "a light; and think I ought to decline "ſharing in an honour, ſo much of which "belongs to another."——

Such a repulſe was no way diſcouraging. The paraſite repeated his aſſertion that the whole was genuinely his, both in words and ſentiments, as indeed he knew not any other, whoſe they could be; and inſiſting that he had no more merit in the affair, than barely that of writing them down, a liberty for which he begged pardon, appealed to his former conduct to acquit him ſo mean a piece of flattery, as giving to another the honour of a work, which had not its equal.

It is not difficult to perſwade a willing mind. The patron could no longer deny what was ſo clearly proved; and what his own conſcience bore teſtimony to, againſt his falſe modeſty. All that remained was to act in ſuch a manner, that his practice ſhould not contradict this declaration of his principles; and ſo raiſe a doubt of their authenticity.

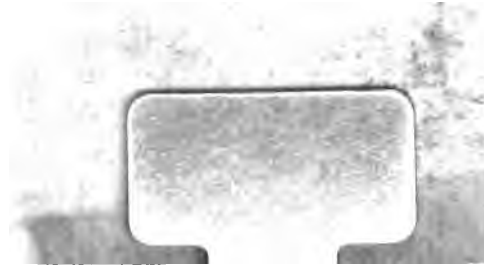
But after having made the firſt ſtep, he found no difficulty in this. He directly changed the whole tenour of his life. He laughed at morality, ridiculed Religion; and profeſſed vices he was unable to practice: And laſtly to compleat his character procured admiſſion into this ſociety, which, as I ſaid, was the proof of every polite accompliſhment and qualification; where he nods, as you ſee, over the grave, as inſenſible to the mirth, and pleaſures, enjoyed by his companions, as of the deſpicableneſs and danger of his own ſituation.

As

As for his paraſite, his end was gained. From that moment he commanded him as he pleaſed, ſharing in the enjoyment of his fortune while he lived; and ſure of ſuch a portion of it, if he ſurvived him, as ſhould ſufficiently ſupply his appetites, the only uſe for which he deſired a fortune.

END OF THE THIRD VOLUME.

BODLEIAN LIBRARY

The gift of

Miss Emma F. I. Dunston